



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

[Collectanea Adamantæa.]

Manon **L**escout and the
Chevalier des **G**rioux.

[Collectanea Adamantæa.]

Manon **L**escant and the
Chevalier des **G**rioux.

*This edition is limited to 275 small-paper copies,
and 75 large-paper copies.*

COLLECTANEA ADAMANTÆA.—XVII.

THE HISTORY OF
MANON LESCAUT

AND

The Chevalier des Grieux.

*A TRANSLATION FROM THE FRENCH
OF THE ABBÉ PRÉVOST*

BY

D. C. MOYLAN

~~~~~  
**Revised and Corrected by**

**EDMUND GOLDSMID, F.R.H.S.,**  
F.S.A. (Scot.)  
~~~~~

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

—♦—
PRIVATELY PRINTED.
EDINBURGH.

1886.

4052.2.9.51



[Faint, illegible handwritten text]



MANON LESCAUT.

I MUST take the reader back to that period of my life when I first met the Chevalier des Grieux.

It was about six months before my departure for Spain. Though I rarely quitted my retreat, still the interest I felt in my child's welfare induced me occasionally to undertake short journeys, which, however, I took good care to abridge as much as possible.

I was one day returning from Rouen, where I had been, at her request, to attend a cause then pending before the Parliament of Normandy, respecting an inheritance to which I had claims derived from my maternal grandfather, and which I had made over to her. Having taken the road by Evreux, where I slept the first night, I on the following day, about dinner-time, reached Passy, a distance of five or six eagues. I was amazed, on entering this quiet town, to see all the inhabitants in commotion. They were pouring from their houses in crowds, towards the gate of a small inn, immediately before which two covered vans were drawn up. Their horses still in harness, and reeking from fatigue and heat, showed that the

cortège had only just arrived. I stopped for a moment to learn the cause of the tumult, but could gain little information from the curious mob as they rushed by, heedless of my inquiries, and hastening impatiently towards the inn in the utmost confusion. At length an archer of the civic guard, wearing his bandolier and carrying a carbine on his shoulder, appeared at the gate; so, beckoning him towards me, I begged to know the cause of the uproar. "Nothing, sir," said he, "but a dozen of the frail sisterhood, that I and my comrades are conducting to Havre-de-Grace, whence we are to ship them for America. There are one or two of them pretty enough; and it is that, apparently, which attracts the curiosity of these country people."

I should have passed on, satisfied with this explanation, if my attention had not been arrested by the cries of an old woman, who was coming out of the inn with her hands clasped, and exclaiming: A downright barbarity!—A scene to excite horror and compassion! "What may this mean?" I inquired. "Oh! sir; go into the house yourself," said the woman, "and see if it is not a sight to rend your heart!" Curiosity made me dismount; and leaving my horse to the care of the ostler, I made my way with some difficulty through the crowd, and did indeed behold a scene sufficiently touching.

Among the twelve girls, who were chained six together by the waist in two rows, there was one, whose whole air and figure seemed so ill-suited to her present

condition, that under other circumstances I should not have hesitated to pronounce her a person of high birth. Her excessive grief, and even the wretchedness of her attire, detracted so little from her surpassing beauty, that at first sight of her I was inspired with a mingled feeling of respect and pity. She tried, as well as the chain would permit her, to turn herself away, and hide her face from the rude gaze of the spectators. There was something so unaffected in the effort she made to escape observation, that it could have sprung from modesty alone.

As the six men who escorted the unhappy train were together in the room, I took the chief one aside, and asked for information respecting this beautiful girl. All that he could supply was of the most vague kind. "We brought her," he said, "from the Hospital, by order of the Lieutenant-general of Police. There is no reason to suppose that she was shut up there for good conduct. I have questioned her often upon the road; but she persists in refusing even to answer me. Yet, although I received no orders to make any distinction between her and the others, I cannot help treating her differently, for she seems to me somewhat superior to her companions. "Yonder is a young man," continued the archer, "who can tell you, better than I can, the cause of her misfortunes. He has followed her from Paris, and has scarcely dried his tears for a single moment. He must be either her brother or her lover."

I turned towards the corner of the room, where

this young man was seated. He seemed buried in a profound reverie. Never did I behold a more affecting picture of grief. He was plainly dressed; but one could see at a glance that he was a man of birth and education. As I approached him he rose, and there was so refined and noble an expression in his eyes, in his whole countenance, in his every movement, that I felt inclined to render him any service in my power. I am unwilling to intrude upon your sorrows, said I, taking a seat beside him, but you will perhaps, gratify the desire I feel to learn something about that beautiful girl, who seems little formed by nature for the miserable condition in which she is placed.

He answered me candidly, that he could not communicate her history without making himself known, and that he had urgent reasons for preserving his own incognito. "I may, however, tell you thus much, for it is no longer a secret to these wretches," he continued, pointing to the 'guards,—“that I adore her with a passion so ardent as to render me the most unhappy of human beings. I tried every means in Paris to obtain her liberty. Petitions, artifice, force—all failed. Go where she may, I have resolved to follow her,—to the extremity of the world. I shall embark with her, and cross to America.”

“But think of the brutal inhumanity of these cowardly ruffians,” he added, speaking of the guards; “they will not allow me to approach her! I had planned an open attack upon them some leagues from Paris;

having secured, as I thought, the aid of four men, who for a considerable sum had promised me their services. The traitors left me in the lurch, and decamped with my money. The impossibility of success made me of course abandon the attempt. I then implored of the guards permission to follow in their train, promising them a recompence. The love of money procured their consent ; but as they required payment every time I was allowed to speak to her, my purse was speedily emptied ; and now that I am utterly penniless, they are barbarous enough to repulse me brutally, whenever I make the slightest attempt to approach her. It is but a moment since, that venturing to do so, in spite of their threats, one of the fellows raised the butt-end of his musket. I am now driven by their exactions, and to obtain the means to continue my journey on foot, to dispose of the miserable horse that has brought me hither."

Although he seemed to recite this story tranquilly enough, I observed the tears start to his eyes as he concluded. This adventure struck me as being not less singular than it was affecting. "I do not press you," said I to him, "to make me the confidant of your secrets ; but if I can be of use to you in any way, I gladly tender you my services." "Alas!" replied he, "I see not the slightest ray of hope. I must reconcile myself to my destiny in all its rigour. I shall go to America : there, at least, I may be free to live with her I love. I have written to a friend, who will send

me money to Havre-de-Grace. My only difficulty is to get so far, and to supply that poor creature, added he, as he cast a look of sorrow at his mistress, with some few comforts upon the way." "Well!" said I to him, "I will relieve you from that difficulty. Here is some money, of which I entreat your acceptance; I am only sorry that I can be of no greater service to you."

I gave him four louis d'or without being perceived by the guards; for I thought that if they knew he had this money, they might have raised the price of their concessions. It occurred to me, even to come to an understanding with them, in order to secure for the young man the privilege of conversing with his mistress, during the rest of the journey to Havre, without hindrance. I beckoned the chief to approach, and made the proposition to him. It seemed to abash the ruffian in spite of his habitual effrontery. "It is not, sir," said he, in an embarrassed tone, "that we refuse to let him speak to the girl, but he wishes to be always near her, which puts us to inconvenience; and it is just that we should be paid for the trouble." "Let us see!" said I to him, "what would suffice to prevent you from feeling the inconvenience?" He had the audacity to demand two louis. I gave them to him on the spot." But have a care," said I to him, that we have no foul play: for I shall give the young man my address, in order that he may write to me on his arrival; and be assured that I am not

without the power to punish you. It cost me altogether six louis-d'or.

The graceful manner and heartfelt gratitude with which the young unknown thanked me, confirmed my notion that he was of good birth, and merited my kindness. I addressed a few words to his mistress before I left the room. She replied to me with a modesty so gentle and so charming that I could not help making, as I went out, a thousand reflections upon the incomprehensible character of women. ✓

Returned to my retreat, I remained in ignorance of the result of this adventure. Two years passed, which completely blotted it from my recollection, when chance brought me an opportunity of learning all the circumstances from beginning to end.

I arrived at Calais, from London, with my pupil, the Marquis of * * *. We lodged, if I remember rightly, at the Golden Lion, where, for some reason, we were obliged to spend the following day and night. Walking along the streets in the afternoon, I fancied I saw the same young man whom I had formerly met at Passy. He was miserably dressed, and much paler than when I first saw him. He carried on his arm an old portmanteau, having only just arrived in the town. He was, however, too handsome not to be easily recognised, and I knew him at once. "Observe that young man," said I to the Marquis; "we must accost him."

His joy was beyond expression when, in his turn,

he recognised me. "Ah, sir!" he cried, kissing my hand, "I have then once again an opportunity of testifying my eternal gratitude to you!" I inquired of him whence he came. He replied, that he had just arrived, by sea, from Havre, where he had lately landed from America. "You do not seem to be too well off for money," said I to him; "go on to the Golden Lion, where I am lodging; I will join you in a moment."

I returned, full of impatience to learn the details of his misfortune, and the circumstances of his voyage to America. I gave him a thousand welcomes, and ordered that they should supply him with everything he wanted. He did not wait to be solicited for the history of his life. "Sir," said he to me, "your conduct is so generous, that I should consider it base ingratitude to maintain any reserve towards you. You shall learn not only my misfortunes and sufferings, but my faults and most culpable weaknesses. I am sure that, even while you blame me, you will not refuse me your sympathy."

I should here inform the reader that I wrote down the story almost immediately after hearing it; and he may, therefore, be assured of the correctness and fidelity of the narrative. I use the word fidelity with reference to the substance of reflections and sentiments which the young man conveyed in the most graceful language. Here, then, is his story, which in its progress I shall not encumber with a single observation that was not his own;

I was seventeen years old, and was finishing my studies at Amiens, whither my parents, who belonged to one of the first families in Picardy, had sent me. I led a life so studious and well regulated, that my very masters pointed to me as a model of conduct for the other scholars. Not that I made any extraordinary efforts to acquire this reputation, but my disposition was naturally tractable and tranquil; I was studious from inclination, and my natural aversion to vice was considered an actual virtue. My academical successes, my birth, and some external advantages of person, made me a general favourite with the inhabitants of the town.

I completed my studies with such general approbation, that the bishop of the diocese, who was present, proposed to me to enter the Church, where I could not fail, he said, to acquire more distinction than in the order of Malta, for which my parents had destined me. I was already decorated with the cross, and called the Chevalier des Grieux. The vacation having arrived, I was preparing to return to my father, who had promised to send me soon to the Academy.

My only regret on quitting Amiens arose from parting with a friend, some years older than myself, to whom I had always been tenderly attached. We had been brought up together; but from the straitened circumstances of his family, he was destined for holy orders, and was to remain after me at Amiens to complete the requisite studies for his sacred calling. He

had a thousand good qualities. . You will recognise in him the very best during the course of my history, and above all, a zeal and fervour of friendship which surpass the most illustrious examples of antiquity. If I had at that time followed his advice, I should have always continued a discreet and happy man. If I had even taken counsel from his reproaches, when on the brink of that gulf into which my passions afterwards plunged me, I might have saved something from the wreck of both fortune and reputation. But he was doomed to see his friendly admonitions disregarded ; nay, even at times repaid by contempt from an ungrateful wretch, who often dared to treat his fraternal conduct as offensive and officious.

I had fixed the day for my departure from Amiens. Alas ! that I had not fixed it one day sooner ! I should then have carried to my father's house my innocence untarnished.

The very evening before my expected departure, as I was walking with my friend, whose name was Tiberge, we saw the Arras diligence arrive, and sauntered after it to the inn, at which these coaches stop. We had no other motive but curiosity. Some women alighted, and immediately retired into the inn. One remained behind : she was very young, and stood by herself in the yard, while a man of advanced age, who appeared to have charge of her, was busy in getting her luggage from the vehicle. She struck me as being so extremely beautiful, that I, who had never

before thought of the difference between the sexes, or looked on women with the slightest attention—I, whose conduct had been hitherto the theme of universal admiration, felt my heart, on the instant, inflamed with passion. I had been always excessively timid, and easily disconcerted ; but, now, instead of meeting with any impediment from this weakness, I advanced without the slightest reserve towards her, who had thus become, in a moment, the mistress of my heart.

Although younger than myself, she received my civilities without embarrassment. I asked the cause of her journey to Amiens, and whether she had any acquaintances in the town. She ingenuously told me that she had been sent there by her parents, to commence her noviciate for taking the veil. Love had so quickened my perception, even in the short moment it had been enthroned, that I saw in this announcement a death-blow to my hopes. I spoke to her in a way that made her at once understand what was passing in my mind ; for she had more experience than myself. It was against her consent that she was consigned to a convent, doubtless to repress that inclination for pleasure which had already become too manifest, and which caused, in the sequel, all her misfortunes and mine. I combated the cruel intention of her parents with all the arguments that my new-born passion and scholastic eloquence could suggest. She affected neither austerity nor reserve. She told me,

after a moment's silence, that she foresaw, too clearly, what her unhappy fate must be ; but that it was, apparently, the will of Heaven, since there were no means left her to avert it. The sweetness of her look, the air of sorrow with which she pronounced these words, or rather perhaps the controlling destiny which led me on to ruin, allowed me not an instant to weigh my answer. I assured her that if she would place reliance on my honour, and on the tender interest with which she had already inspired me, I would sacrifice my life to deliver her from the tyranny of her parents, and to render her happy. I have since been a thousand times astonished, in reflecting upon it, to think how I could have expressed myself with so much boldness and facility ; but Love could never have become a divinity, if he had not often worked miracles.

I made many other pressing and tender speeches ; and my unknown fair one was perfectly aware that mine was not the age for deceit. She confessed to me that if I could see but a reasonable hope of being able to effect her enfranchisement, she should deem herself indebted for my kindness in more than life itself could pay. I repeated that I was ready to attempt anything in her behalf : but, not having sufficient experience at once to imagine any reasonable plan of serving her, I did not go beyond this general assurance, from which indeed little good could arise either to her or to myself. Her old Argus having

by this time joined us, my hopes would have been blighted, but that she had tact enough to make amends for my stupidity. I was surprised, on his approaching us, to hear her call me her cousin, and say, without being in the slightest degree disconcerted, that as she had been so fortunate as to fall in with me at Amiens, she would not go into the convent until the next morning, in order to have the pleasure of meeting me at supper. I at once comprehended the meaning of this ruse ; and proposed that she should lodge for the night at the house of an innkeeper, who, after being many years my father's coachman, had lately established himself at Amiens, and who was sincerely attached to me.

I conducted her there myself, at which the old Argus appeared to grumble a little ; and my friend Tiberge, who was puzzled by the whole scene, followed without uttering a word. He had not heard our conversation, having walked up and down the court while I was talking of love to my lovely mistress. As I had some doubts of his discretion, I got rid of him, by begging that he would execute a commission for me. I had thus the happiness, on arriving at the inn, of entertaining alone the sovereign of my heart.

I soon learned that I was less a child than I had before imagined. My heart expanded to a thousand sentiments of pleasure, of which before I had not the remotest idea. A delicious consciousness of warmth diffused itself through my veins. I sank into a kind

of ecstasy, which deprived me for a time of the power of utterance, and which found vent only through my glances.

MANON LESCAUT (this she told me was her name) seemed gratified by the visible effect of her own charms. She appeared to me not less excited than myself. She acknowledged that she was greatly pleased with me, and that she should be enchanted to owe to me her freedom. She would insist on hearing who I was, and the knowledge only augmented her affection ; for, being herself of humble birth, she was flattered by securing for her lover a man of family. We discussed by what means we might become possessed of each other.

After many reflections, we could discover no other resource than in flight. To effect this it would be requisite to cheat the vigilance of Manon's guardian, who required management, although he was but a servant. We determined, therefore, that, during the night, I should procure a post-chaise, and return with it at break of day to the inn, before he was awake ; that we should steal away quietly, and go straight to Paris, where we should get married on our arrival. I had about fifty crowns in my pocket, my little savings ; and she had about twice as much. We imagined, like inexperienced children, that such a sum could never be exhausted, and we counted, with equal confidence, upon the success of our other schemes.

After having supped more satisfactorily than ever,

~~before~~ I retired to prepare for our project. All my arrangements were the more easy, as, intending to return on the morrow to my father's, my luggage had been already packed. I had, therefore, no difficulty in removing my trunk, and having a chaise prepared for five o'clock in the morning, at which hour the gates of the town would be opened; but I encountered an obstacle which I was little prepared for, and which nearly upset all my plans.

Tiberge, although only three years older than myself, was a youth of unusually strong mind, and of the best regulated conduct. He loved me with singular affection. The sight of so lovely a girl as Manon, my ill-disguised impatience to conduct her to the inn, and the anxiety I betrayed to get rid of him, had excited in his mind some suspicions of my passion. He had not ventured to return to the inn where he had left me, for fear of my being annoyed at his doing so; but went to wait for me at my lodgings, where, although it was ten o'clock at night, I found him on my arrival. His presence annoyed me, and he soon perceived the restraint which it imposed. "I am certain," said he to me, without any disguise, "that you have some plan in contemplation which you will not confide to me; I see it by your manner. I answered him rather abruptly, that I was not bound to render him an account of all my plans. "Certainly not!" he replied;" but you have always, hitherto, treated me as a friend, and that appellation implies a certain degree

of confidence and candour." He pressed me so much and so earnestly to confide to him my secret, that having never up to that moment felt the slightest reserve towards him, I confessed to him now the whole history of my passion. He heard it with an appearance of disapprobation, which made me tremble; and I repented of my indiscretion, in telling him of my intended elopement. He told me he was too sincerely my friend not to oppose every obstacle in his power to such a scheme; that he would first try all other means of turning me from such a purpose, but that if I refused to renounce so fatal a resolution, he assuredly would inform some persons of my intention, who would be able to defeat it. He held forth upon the subject for a full quarter of an hour, in the most serious tone, and ended by again threatening to inform against me, if I did not pledge him my word that I would return to the paths of discretion and reason.

I was in despair at having so awkwardly betrayed myself. However, Love having wonderfully sharpened my intellect during the last two or three hours, I recollected that I had not yet told him of its being my intention to execute my project on the following morning, and I at once determined to deceive him by a little equivocation.

"Tiberge," said I to him, "up to the present moment I thought you were my friend; and I wished to prove it by the test of confidence. It is true, I am in love ;

I have not deceived you : but with regard to my flight, that is a project not to be undertaken without deliberation. Call for me to-morrow at nine o'clock, you shall see my mistress, if it be possible, and then judge whether she is not worthy of this risk on my part." He left me with a thousand protestations of friendship.

I employed the night in settling some private matters, and on repairing to the inn at early dawn, I found Manon waiting my arrival. She was at her window, which looked upon the street, and perceiving my approach, she came down and opened the door herself. We took our departure silently. She merely brought away a small bundle of linen, of which I took charge. The chaise was in readiness, and we were soon at a distance from the town.

You will learn in the sequel what was the conduct of Tiberge, when he discovered that I had deceived him ; that his zeal to serve me suffered no diminution ; and you will observe to what lengths his devotion carried him. How ought I to grieve, when I reflect on the base ingratitude with which his affection was always repaid !

We made much speed on our journey that before night we reached St. Denis. I rode alongside of the chaise, which gave us little opportunity for conversation, except while changing horses ; but when we found ourselves so near Paris, and out of the reach of danger, we allowed ourselves time for refreshment, not

having tasted food since we quitted Amiens. Passionately in love as I felt with Manon, she managed to convince me that she was equally so with me. So little did we restrain our fondness, that we had not even patience to reserve our caresses till we were alone. The postilions and hotel-keepers stared at us with wonder, and I remarked that they appeared surprised at such uncontrollable love in children of our age.

Our project of marriage was forgotten at St. Denis; we defrauded the Church of her rights; and became
S | man and wife on the impulse of the moment. It is certain that with my tender and constant disposition, I should have been happy for my whole life, if Manon had remained faithful to me. The more I saw of her, the more I discovered in her new perfections. Her mind, her heart, her gentleness and beauty, formed a chain at once so binding and so agreeable, that I could have found perfect happiness in being for ever bound therewith. Terrible fatality! that which has been the source of my despair, might, under a slight change of circumstances, have constituted my happiness. I find myself the most wretched of mankind, by the force of that very constancy from which I might fairly have expected to derive the most serene of human bliss, and the most perfect recompence of love.

We took a furnished apartment at Paris, in the Rue V——, and, as it afterwards, turned out, to my

sorrow, close to the house of M. de B——, the Fermier général.* Three weeks passed, during which I was so absorbed in my passion, that I never gave a thought to my family, nor dreamed of the distress which my father probably felt at my absence. However, as there was yet nothing of profligacy about me, and as Manon conducted herself with the strictest propriety, the tranquil life we lead served to restore me by degrees to a sense of duty.

I resolved to effect, if possible, a reconciliation with my father. My mistress was to me so perfectly loveable, that I could not doubt her power of captivating him, if I could only find the means of making him acquainted with her good conduct and merit. In a word, I relied on obtaining his consent to our marriage, having given up all idea of accomplishing it without his approval.† I mentioned the project to Manon, and explained to her that, besides every motive of filial love and duty, the weightier one of necessity should also have some influence ; for our finances were sadly reduced, and I began to see the folly of thinking them, as I once did, inexhaustible.

Manon received the proposition with considerable

* The taxes, in France, were farmed, and those who secured the concessions were styled " Fermiers généraux."

† In France, the parents' consent is indispensable in the case of a minor.

coldness. However, the difficulties she made being apparently the suggestions of tenderness alone, arising from the natural fear of losing me, if my father, after learning my address, should refuse his assent to our union, I had not the smallest suspicion of the cruel blow she was at the time preparing to inflict. As to the argument of necessity, she replied that we had still abundant means of living for some weeks longer, and she would then find a resource in the kindness of some relations in the country, to whom she would write. She tempered her opposition by caresses so tender and impassioned, that I, who lived only for her, and who never had the slightest misgiving as to her love, applauded at once her arguments and her resolutions.

To Manon I had committed the care of our finances, and the household arrangements. In a short time I observed that our style of living was improved, and that she had treated herself to rather expensive ornaments. As I calculated that we could hardly have at this period more than fifteen or twenty crowns remaining, I did not conceal my surprise at this mysterious augmentation of our wealth. She begged of me, with a smile, to give myself no trouble on that head. "Did I not promise you," said she, "that I would find resources?" I loved her too much to experience the slightest suspicion.

One day, having gone out in the afternoon, and told her that I should not be at home so early as usual,

I was astonished, on my return, at being detained several minutes at the door. Our only servant was a young girl about our own age. On her letting me in at last, I asked why she had detained me so long? She replied in an embarrassed tone, that she did not hear me knock. "I only knocked once," said I; "so if you did not hear me, why come to open the door at all?" This query disconcerted her so visibly, that losing her presence of mind, she began to cry, assuring me that it was not her fault; and that her mistress had desired her not to open the door until Mr. de B—— had had time to go down by the back staircase. I was so confounded by this information as to be utterly unable to enter our apartment; and determined to leave the house, under the pretext of an appointment. I desired the girl, therefore, to let her mistress know that I should return in a few minutes, but on no account to say that she had spoken to me of Mr. de B——.

My misery was so great, that I shed tears as I descended the stairs, hardly knowing from what feeling they flowed. I entered a coffee-house close by, and placing myself at a table, I buried my face in my hands, as though I would turn my eyes inwardly to ascertain what was passing in my heart. Still, I dared not recall what I had heard the moment before. I strove to look upon it as a dream; and was more than once on the point of returning to my lodgings, determined to attach no importance to what I had heard. It appeared to me

so impossible that Manon could have been unfaithful that I feared, even to wrong her by a suspicion. I adored her—that was certain; I had not on my part given her more proofs of my love than I had received of hers; why then should I charge her with being less sincere and constant than myself? What reason could she have to deceive me? Not three hours before, she had lavished upon me the most tender caresses, and had received mine with transport: I knew her heart as thoroughly as my own. “No, no!” I said, “it is not possible that Manon can have deceived me. She well knows that I live but for her; that I adore her: surely that is no reason why she should hate me.”

Notwithstanding these reflections, the visit of M. de B., and his secret departure, gave me some uneasiness. I remembered, too, the little purchases he had lately made, which seemed beyond our present means; this looked like the liberality of a new lover. And the confidence with which she had foretold resources which were to me unknown. I had some difficulty in solving these mysteries in as favourable a manner as my heart desired.

On the other hand, she had been hardly out of my sight since we entered Paris. However occupied, in our walks, in all our amusements, she was ever by my side. Heavens! even a momentary separation would have been too painful. We found it indispensable to repeat incessantly that we adored each other; otherwise, it seemed to us that we could not live. I could

not therefore imagine how Manon could have devoted a single instant to any other person.

At last I thought I had discovered a clue to the mystery. "M. de B——," said I to myself, "is a man extensively engaged in commercial affairs; and Manon's relations have, no doubt, remitted her money through his house. She has probably already received some from him, and he has come to-day to bring her more. She wishes, perhaps, to derive amusement by-and-bye from an agreeable surprise, by keeping me at present in the dark. She would doubtless have at once told me all, if I had gone in as usual, instead of coming here to distress myself: at all events, she will not conceal it from me when I broach the subject myself."

I cherished this idea so willingly, that it considerably lightened my grief. I immediately returned to my lodgings, and embraced Manon as tenderly as ever. She received me as usual. At first I was tempted to mention my conjectures, which I now, more than ever, looked upon as certain; but I restrained myself in the hope that she might render it unnecessary by informing me of all that had passed.

Supper was served. Assuming an air of gaiety, I took my seat at the table; but by the light of the candles which were between us, I fancied I perceived an air of melancholy about the eyes and countenance of my beloved mistress. The very thought soon damped my gaiety. I remarked that her looks wore

an unusual expression, and although nothing could be more soft or tranquilising, I was at a loss to discover whether they conveyed more of love than of compassion. I gazed at her with equal earnestness, and she perhaps had no less difficulty in comprehending from my countenance what was passing in my heart. We neither spoke nor ate. At length I saw tears starting from her beauteous eyes—perfidious tears! “Oh heavens!” I cried, “my dearest Manon, why allow your sorrows to afflict you to this degree without imparting their cause to me?” She answered me only with sighs, which increased my misery. I arose trembling from my seat: I conjured her, with all the urgent earnestness of love, to let me know the cause of her grief: I wept in endeavouring to soothe her sorrows; I was more dead than alive. A barbarian would have pitied my sufferings as I stood trembling with grief and apprehension.

While my attention was thus confined to her, I heard people coming up stairs. They tapped gently at the door. Manon gave me a kiss, and escaping from my arms, quickly entered the boudoir, turning the key after her. I imagined that, not being dressed to receive strangers, she was unwilling to meet the persons who had knocked. I went to let them in.

I had hardly opened the door when I found myself seized by three men, whom I recognised as my father’s servants. They offered not the least vio-

lence, but two of them taking me by the arms, the third examined my pockets, and took out a small knife, the only weapon I had about me. They apologised for the necessity they were under of treating me with apparent disrespect; telling me frankly that they were acting by the orders of my father, and that my eldest brother was in a carriage below, waiting to receive me. My feelings were so overpowered, that I allowed myself to be led away without making either reply or resistance. I found my brother waiting for me as they had stated. They placed me by his side, and the coachman immediately drove, by his orders, towards St. Denis. My brother embraced me most affectionately, but during our ride he uttered not a word, so that I had as much leisure as I could desire, to reflect upon my misfortunes.

The whole affair was so involved in obscurity that I could not see my way even to a reasonable conjecture. I was cruelly betrayed, — that was certain; but by whom? Tiberge first occurred to me. "Tiberge!" said I, "it is as much as thy life is worth, if my suspicions turn out to be well founded." However, I recollected that he could not possibly know my abode; and therefore, he could not have furnished the information. To accuse Manon was more than my heart was capable of. The unusual melancholy with which she had lately seemed weighed down, her tears, the tender kiss she gave me in parting, made it all as yet a mystery to me. I

could only look upon her recent melancholy as a presentiment of our common misfortune; and while I was deploring the event which tore me from her, I was credulous enough to consider her fate more deserving of pity than my own.

The result of my reflections was, that I had been seen and followed in the streets of Paris by some persons of my acquaintance, who had conveyed the information to my father. This idea comforted me. I made up my mind to encounter some reproaches, or perhaps harsh treatment, for having outraged the paternal authority. I resolved, however, to suffer with patience, and to promise all that might be required of me, in order to facilitate my speedy return to Paris, that I might restore life and happiness to my dear Manon.

We soon arrived at St. Denis. My brother, surprised at my long silence, thought it the effect of fear. He assured me that I had nothing to apprehend from my father's severity, provided I showed a disposition to return quietly to the path of duty, and prove myself worthy of his affection. He made me pass the night at St. Denis, merely taking the precaution of putting the three lackeys to sleep in my room. It caused me a pang to find myself in the same inn where I had stopped with Manon on our way from Amiens to Paris. The innkeeper and his servants recognized me, and guessed at once the truth of my history. I overheard them say: "Ah! that's the handsome young

gentleman, who travelled this road about a month ago, with the beautiful girl he appeared so much in love with! How pretty she was! The poor young things, how they caressed each other! Pity if they have been separated!" I pretended not to hear, and kept as much out of sight as possible.

At St. Denis my brother had a chariot waiting for us, in which we started early the next morning, and arrived at home before night. He saw my father first, in order to make a favourable impression by telling him how quietly I had allowed myself to be brought away, so that his reception of me was less austere than I had expected. He merely rebuked me in general terms for the offence I had committed, by absenting myself without his permission. As for my mistress he said I richly deserved what had happened to me, for abandoning myself to a person utterly unknown; that he had entertained a better opinion of my discretion; but that he hoped this little adventure would make me wiser. I took the whole lecture only in the sense that accorded with my own notions. I thanked my father for his indulgence, and promised that I would in future observe a better regulated and more obedient conduct. I felt that I had secured a triumph; for, from the aspect of affairs, there was no doubt that I should be free to effect my escape from the house even before the night was over.

We sat down to supper. They rallied me about my Amiens conquest, and my flight with that paragon

of fidelity. I took their jokes in good part, glad enough at being permitted to revolve in my mind the plans I had meditated ; but some words which fell from father made me listen with earnest attention. He spoke of perfidy, and the not disinterested kindness of M. de B——. I was almost paralyzed on hearing the name, and begged of my father to explain himself. He turned to my brother to ask if he had not told me the whole story. My brother answered that I appeared to him so tranquil upon the road, that he did not suppose I required this remedy to cure me of my folly. I remarked that my father was doubtful whether he should give me the explanation or not. I entreated him so earnestly that he satisfied me, or I should rather say tortured me, with the following most horrible narration.

He began by asking me whether I was indeed simple enough to believe that I had been really loved by the girl. I told him confidently that I was perfectly sure of it, and that nothing could make me for a moment doubt it. "Ha, ha, ha !" said he, with a loud laugh ! "that is excellent ! you are a pretty dupe ! Admirable idea ! 'Twould be a thousand pities, my poor chevalier, to make you a knight of Malta, with all the requisites you possess for a patient and accommodating husband." He continued in the same tone to ridicule what he was pleased to call my dulness and credulity.

He concluded, while I maintained a profound silence, by saying that, according to the nicest calculation he could make of the time since my departure from Amiens, Manon must have been in love with me about twelve days; "for," said he, "I know that you left Amiens on the 28th of last month; this is the 29th of the present; it is eleven days since M. de B—— wrote to me; I suppose he required eight days to establish a perfect understanding with your mistress; so that, take eight and eleven from thirty-one days, the time between the 28th of one month and the 29th of the next, there remains twelve, more or less!" This joke was followed by shouts of laughter.

I heard it all with a kind of sinking of the heart that I thought I could not bear up against, until he finished. "You must know then," continued my father, "since you appear as yet ignorant of it, that M. de B—— has won the affections of your idol; for he can't be serious in pretending that it is his disinterested regard for me that has induced him to take her from you. It would be absurd to expect such noble sentiments from a man of his description, and one, besides, who is a perfect stranger to me. He knew that you were my son, and in order to get rid of you, he wrote to inform me of your abode, and of the life you led; saying, at the same time, that strong measures would be necessary to secure you. He offered to procure me the means of laying hold of you; and it was by his direction, as well as that of your mistress herself, that

your brother hit upon the moment of catching you unawares. Now, you may congratulate yourself upon the duration of your triumph. You know how to conquer, rapidly enough, Chevalier ; but you have yet to learn how to secure your conquests."

I could no longer endure these remarks, every one of which stuck a dagger into my heart. I arose from the table, and had not advanced four steps towards the door, when I fell upon the floor, perfectly senseless. By prompt applications they soon brought me to myself. My eyes opened only to shed a torrent of tears, and my lips to utter the most sorrowful and heart-rending complaints. My father, who always loved me most affectionately, tried every means to console me. I listened to him, but his words were without effect. I threw myself at his feet, conjuring him to let me return to Paris, and kill M. B——. "No!" cried I; "he has not gained Manon's heart. He has used violence towards her; he has seduced her by some witch-craft or drug: perhaps by sheer brutality. Manon loves me. Do I not know that well? He must have terrified her with a poniard, to induce her to abandon me. What must he not have done to have robbed me of my angelic mistress? O Heaven! Heaven! can it be possible that Manon deceived me, or that she has ceased to love me!"

As I continued to rave about returning at once to Paris, and was perpetually starting up with that purpose, my father clearly saw that while the paroxysm

lasted, no arguments could pacify me. He conducted me to one of the upper rooms, and left two servants to keep constant watch over me. I was completely bewildered. I would have given a thousand lives, to be but for one quarter of an hour in Paris. I had sense enough, however, to know that having so openly declared my intention, they would not easily allow me to quit my chamber. I looked at the height of the windows. Seeing no possibility of escaping that way, I addressed the servants in the most tranquil tone. I promised, with the most solemn vows, to make, at some future day, their fortunes, if they would but consent to my escape. I entreated them; I tried caresses, and lastly threats; but all were unavailing. I gave myself up to despair. I resolved to die; and threw myself upon the bed, with a firm determination to quit it only with my life. In this situation I passed the night and the following day. I refused the nourishment that was brought to me next morning.) S. P. 32

My father came to see me in the afternoon. He tried, in the most affectionate manner, to soothe my grief. He desired me so urgently to take some refreshment, that, to gratify him, I obeyed his wishes. Several days passed, during which I took nothing but in his presence, and at his special request. He continued to furnish new arguments to restore me to my proper senses, and to inspire me with merited contempt for the faithless Manon. I certainly had lost

all esteem for her : how could I esteem the most fickle and perfidious of created beings ! But her image—those exquisite features, which were engraven on my heart's core were still uneffaced. I understood my own feelings ; I may die, said I, and I ought to die after so much shame and grief ; but I might suffer a thousand deaths without being able to forget the ingrate Manon. My father was surprised at my still continuing so powerfully affected. He knew that I was imbued with principles of honour ; and not doubting that her infidelity must make me despise her, fancied that my obstinacy proceeded less from this particular passion, than from a general inclination towards the sex. This idea so took possession of his mind, that, prompted only by his affection for me, he came one day to reveal his thoughts. "Chevalier," said he to me, "it has been hitherto my intention to make you bear the cross of Malta ; I now see that your inclinations do not bend that way. You are an admirer of beauty. I will try to find you a wife to your taste. Let me candidly know how you feel upon the subject."

I answered that I could never again see the slightest difference amongst women, and that after the misfortune I had experienced, I detested them all equally. "I will find you one," replied my father, smiling, "who shall resemble Manon in beauty, but who shall be more faithful."—"Ah ! if you have any mercy," said I, "you will restore my Manon to me. Be assured, my

dear father, that she has not betrayed me ; she is incapable of such base and cruel treachery. It is the perfidious B—— who deceives both her and me. If you could form an idea of her tenderness and her sincerity ; if you only knew her, you yourself would love her ! ” “ You are absolutely a child,” replied my father. “ How can you so delude yourself, after what I have told you about her ? It was she who actually delivered you up to your brother. You ought to obliterate even her name from your memory, and take advantage, if you are wise, of the indulgence I am showing you.”

I very clearly perceived that my father was right. It was an involuntary emotion that made me thus take part with the traitress. “ Alas ! ” replied I, after a moment’s silence, “ it is but too true that I am the unhappy victim of the vilest perfidy. Yes, I continued, while shedding tears of anger, I too clearly perceive that I am indeed but a child. Credulity like mine was easily gulled ; but I shall be at no loss to revenge myself.” My father enquired of me my intentions : “ I will go to Paris,” I said, “ set fire to B——’s house, and immolate him and the perfidious Manon together.” This burst made my father laugh, and had only the effect of causing me to be more vigilantly watched in my cell.

I thus passed six long months ; during the first of which my mind underwent little change. My feelings were in a state of perpetual alternation between hate

and love ; between hope and despair ; according as the tendency of each passing thought brought Manon back to my recollection. At one time, I could see in her the most delightful of women only, and sigh for the pleasure of beholding her once more ; at another, I felt she was the most unworthy and perfidious of mistresses, and I would on these occasions swear never again to see her, but for the purpose of revenge.

I was supplied with books, which served to restore my peace of mind. I read once again all my favourite authors ; and I became acquainted with new ones. All my former taste for study was revived. You will see of what use this was to me in the sequel. The light I had already derived from love, enabled me to comprehend many passages in Horace and Virgil, which had before appeared obscure. I wrote an amatory commentary upon the fourth book of the *Æneid*. I intend one day to publish it, and I flattered myself it will be popular. Alas ! I use to exclaim, whilst employed in that work, it was for a heart like mine that faithful Dido sighed, and sighed in vain !

While in my confinement, Tiberge came one day to see me. I was surprised at the affectionate joy with which he saluted me. I had never, hitherto, observed any peculiar warmth in his friendship that could lead me to look upon it as anything more than the partiality common among boys of the same age. He was so altered, and had grown so manly during the five or six months since I had last seen him, that

his expressive features and his manner of addressing me inspired me with a feeling of respect. He spoke more in the character of a Mentor rather than in that of a schoolfellow, lamented the delusion into which I had fallen, congratulated me on my reformation, which he believed was now sincere, and ended by exhorting me to profit by my youthful error, and open my eyes to the vanity of worldly pleasures. I looked at him with some astonishment, which he at once perceived.

"My dear chevalier," said he to me, "you shall hear nothing but the strict truth, of which I have assured myself by the most serious examination. I had, perhaps, as strong an inclination for sensual pleasure as you but Heaven had at the same time, in its mercy, blessed me with a taste for virtue. I exercised my reason in comparing the consequences of the one with those of the other, and divine aid was graciously vouchsafed to my reflections. I have conceived for the world a contempt which nothing can equal. Can you guess what retains me in it now," he added, "and prevents me from embracing a life of solitude? Simply the sincere friendship I bear towards you. I know the excellent qualities of both your heart and head. There is no good of which you may not render yourself capable. The blandishments of pleasure have momentarily driven you aside. What a loss to the sacred cause of virtue! Your flight from Amiens gave me such intense sorrow, that I have not since

eye can
become
towards
of calling
myself
the world

known a moment's happiness. You may judge of this by the steps it induced me to take." He then told me how, after discovering that I had deceived him, and gone off with my mistress, he procured horses for the purpose of pursuing me, but having the start of him by four or five hours, he found it impossible to overtake me; he arrived, however, at St. Denis half an hour after I had left it; being very sure that I must have stopped in Paris, he spent six weeks there in a fruitless endeavour to discover me,—visiting every place where he thought he should be likely to meet me, and that one evening he at length recognised my mistress at the play, where she was so gorgeously dressed, that he of course set it down to the account of some new lover; that he had followed the equipage to her house, and had there learned from a servant that she was kept in this style by Mr. de B——. "I did not stop here," continued he; "I returned next day to the house, to learn from her own lips what had become of you. She turned abruptly away when she heard the mention of your name, and I was obliged to return into the country without further information. I there learned the particulars of your adventure, and the extreme grief she had caused you; but I was unwilling to visit you until I could have assurance of your being in a more tranquil state.

"You have seen Manon then!" cried I, sighing. "Alas! you are happier than I, who am doomed never again to behold her." He rebuked me for this

sigh, which still showed my weakness for this perfidious girl. He flattered me so adroitly about the goodness of my mind and disposition, that he really inspired me, even on this first visit, with a strong inclination to renounce, as he had done, the pleasures of the world, and enter at once into holy orders.

The idea was so suited to my present frame of mind, that when alone I thought of nothing else. I remembered the words of the Bishop of Amiens, who had given me the same advice, and thought only of the happiness which he predicted would result from my adoption of such a course. Piety itself took part in these suggestions. "I shall lead a holy and a Christian life," said I; "I shall divide my time between study and religion, which will allow me no leisure for the perilous pleasures of love. I shall despise that which men ordinarily admire; and as I am conscious that my heart will desire nothing but what it can esteem, my cares will not be more numerous than my wishes.

I thereupon pictured to myself in anticipation a course of life peaceful and retired. I fancied a retreat embosomed in a wood, with a limpid stream of running water bounding my garden; a library, comprising the most select works; a limited circle of friends, virtuous and intellectual; a table neatly served, but frugal and temperate. To all these pleasures I added a literary correspondence with a friend whose residence should be in Paris, who should give me occasional information upon public affairs, less for the gratification of my

*Her true
attitude by
showing the
discovery of
the world, and
in self.*

curiosity, than to afford me a kind of relaxation by hearing of and lamenting the busy follies of men. "Shall not I be happy?" added I; "will not my utmost wishes be thus gratified?" This project flattered my inclinations extremely. But after all the details of this most admirable and prudent plan, I felt that my heart still yearned for something; and that in order to leave nothing to desire in this most enchanting retirement, one ought to be able to share it with Manon.

However, Tiberge continuing to pay me frequent visits in order to strengthen me in the purpose with which he had inspired me, I took an opportunity of opening the subject to my father. He declared that his intention ever was to leave his children free to choose a profession, and that in whatever manner I should dispose of myself, all he wished to reserve was the right of aiding me with his counsel. On this occasion he gave me some of the wisest, which tended less to divert me from my project, than to enable me to judge the matter more correctly.

The recommencement of the scholastic year being at hand, Tiberge and I agreed to enter ourselves together at the College of St. Sulpice; he to pursue his theological studies, and I to begin mine. His merits, which were not unknown to the bishop of the diocese, procured him the promise of a living from that prelate before our departure.

My father, thinking me quite cured of my passion, made no objection to my leaving. We

arrived at Paris. The cross of Malta gave place to the ecclesiastical habit, and the designation of the Abbé des Grieux was substituted for that of Chevalier. I applied myself so diligently to study, that in a few months I had made extraordinary progress. I never lost a moment of the day, and employed even a part of the night. I soon acquired such a reputation, that I was already congratulated upon the honours which I was sure of obtaining ; and, without solicitation on my part, my name was inscribed on the list for a vacant benefice. Piety was by no means neglected, and I entered with ardent devotion into all the exercises of religion. Tiberge was proud of what he considered the work of his own hands, and many a time have I seen him shed tears of delight in noticing what he styled my conversion.

~~I~~ It has never been matter of wonder to me that human resolutions are liable to change ; one passion gives them birth, another may destroy them : but when I reflect upon the sacredness of those motives that led me to St. Sulpice, and upon the heartfelt satisfaction I enjoyed while obeying their dictation, I shudder at the facility with which I outraged them all. If it be true that the benign succour afforded by Heaven is at all times equal to the strongest of man's passions, I shall be glad to learn the nature of the deplorable ascendancy which causes us suddenly to swerve from the path of duty, without the power of offering the least resistance, and without even the slightest visitation of remorse.

I now thought myself entirely safe from the dangers of love. I fancied that I could have preferred a single page of St. Augustine, or a quarter of an hour of Christian meditation, to every sensual gratification, not excepting any that I might have derived even from Manon's society. Nevertheless, one unlucky moment plunged me again headlong into the gulf; and my ruin was the more irreparable, because, falling at once to the same depth from whence I had been before rescued, each of the new disorders into which I now lapsed, carried me deeper and deeper still down the profound abyss of vice. I had passed nearly a year at Paris without hearing of Manon. It caused me no slight effort to abstain from enquiry; but the unremitting advice of Tiberge, and my own reflections, secured this victory over my wishes. The last months glided away so tranquilly, that I considered the memory of this charming but treacherous creature about to be consigned to eternal oblivion.

The time arrived when I was to undergo a public examination in the class of theology: I invited several persons of consideration to honour me with their presence on the occasion. My name was mentioned in every quarter of Paris: it even reached the ears of her who had betrayed me. She had some difficulty in recognising it with the prefix of Abbé; but curiosity, or perhaps remorse for having been faithless to me (I could never after ascertain by which of these feelings she was actuated), made her at once an interest

in a name so like mine ; and she came with several other women to the Sorbonne, where she was present at my examination, and had doubtless little trouble in recognising my person.

I had not the remotest suspicion of her presence. It is well known that in these places there are private seats for ladies, where they remain screened by a curtain. I returned to St. Sulpice covered with honours and congratulations. It was six in the evening. The moment I returned, a lady was announced, who desired to speak with me. I went to the visitors' room. Heavens ! what a surprise ! it was Manon. It was she indeed, but more bewitching and brilliant than I had ever beheld her. She was now in her eighteenth year. Her beauty beggars all description. The exquisite grace of her form, the mild sweetness of expression that animated her features, and her engaging air, made her seem the very personification of Love. To my mind, she was enchanting. ✓

I stood confused at beholding her. Unable to define the object of her visit, I waited trembling and with downcast looks until she explained herself. At first, her embarrassment was equal to mine ; but, seeing that I was not disposed to break silence, she raised her hand to her eyes to conceal a starting tear, and then, in a timid tone, said that she well knew she had justly earned my abhorrence by her infidelity ; but that if ever I felt any love for her, there was not much kindness in allowing two long years to pass without

inquiring after her, and as little now in seeing her in the state of mental distress in which she was, without condescending to bestow on her a single word. I shall not attempt to describe what my feelings were as I listened to this reproof.

She seated herself. I remained standing, with face half turned aside, for I could not muster courage to meet her look. I several times commenced a reply without power to conclude it. At length I made an effort, and in a tone of poignant grief exclaimed : "Perfidious Manon ! perfidious, perfidious creature !" She had no wish, she repeated with a flood of tears, to attempt to justify her infidelity. "What is your wish, then ?" cried I. "I wish to die," she answered, "if you will not give me back that heart, without which it is impossible to endure life." "Take my life, too, then faithless girl !" I exclaimed, in vain endeavouring to restrain my tears ; "take my life also ! it is the sole sacrifice that remains for me to make, for my heart has never ceased to be thine."

I had hardly uttered these words, when she rose up in a transport of joy, and approached to embrace me. She loaded me with a thousand passionate caresses. She addressed me by all the endearing appellations with which Love supplies his votaries, to enable them to express the most passionate fondness. I still answered with a certain coldness ; what a sudden transition from a state of quietude, such as that I had up to this moment enjoyed, to the agitation and

tumult which I now felt once again taking possession of my breast !

We sat down close by each other. I took her hands within mine. "Ah ! Manon," said I, with a look of sorrow, "I little thought that love like mine could have been repaid with treachery ! It was a poor triumph to betray a heart of which you were the absolute mistress,—whose sole happiness it was to gratify and obey you. Tell me if among others you have found any so affectionate and so devoted ? No, no ! I believe Nature has cast few hearts in the same mould as mine. Tell me at least whether you have ever thought of me with regret ! How can I depend on this fresh impulse of affection that brings you once more back to me ! I perceive too plainly that you are infinitely lovelier than ever ; but I conjure you by all my past sufferings, dearest Manon, to tell me,—Can you in future be more faithful ?"

She gave me in reply such tender assurances of her repentance, and pledged her fidelity with such solemn protestations and vows, that I was inexpressibly affected. "Beauteous Manon," said I, with rather a profane mixture of amorous and theological expressions, "you are too adorable for a created being. I feel my heart transported with triumphant rapture.—Liberty at St Sulpice is mere folly. I am about to sacrifice fortune and reputation at your shrine ! I plainly foresee it ; I can read my destiny in your bright eyes ; but what abundant recompense shall

*He is not blinded when he again falls for
Manon. He has clear picture in his mind of the
consequences. He says he will ~~suffer~~ sacrifice
fortune and reputation at her shrine*

He does not value them highly, what he is giving up
"Popet oja" ~~body~~ life are more ~~absurdities~~

I not find in your affections for any loss I may sustain !
The favours of Fortune have no influence over me :
Fame itself appears to me but a mockery ; all my projects of a holy life were wild absurdities ; in fact, any joys but those I may hope for at your side are fit objects of contempt. There are none that would not vanish into worthlessness before one single glance of yours !"

In promising her, however, a full remission of her past frailties, I inquired how she permitted herself to be seduced by B——. She informed me that having seen her at our window he became passionately in love with her ; that he made his advances in the true style of a *Fermier général* ;—that is to say, by giving her to understand in his letter, that his payments would be proportioned to her favours ; that she had admitted his overtures at first with no other intention than that of getting from him such a sum as might enable us to live without inconvenience ; but that he had so bewildered her with splendid promises, that she allowed herself to be misled by degrees. She added, that I ought to have formed some notion of the remorse she experienced, by her grief on the night of our separation ; and assured me that, in spite of the splendour in which he maintained her, she had never known a moment's happiness with him, not only because he was utterly devoid of that delicacy of sentiment and of those agreeable manners which I possessed, but because even in the

✓

midst of the amusements which he unceasingly procured her, she could never shake off the recollection of my love, or her own ingratitude. She then spoke of Tiberge and the extreme embarrassment his visit caused her. "A dagger's point," she added, "could not have struck more terror to my heart. I turned from him, unable to sustain the interview for a moment."

She continued to inform me how she had been apprised of my residence in Paris, of the change in my condition, and of her witnessing my examination at the Sorbonne. She told me how agitated she had been during my intellectual conflict; what difficulty she felt in restraining her tears as well as her sighs, which were more than once on the point of spurning all control, and bursting forth; that she was the last person to leave the hall of examination, for fear of betraying her distress, and that, following only the instinct of her own heart, and her ardent desires, she came direct to the seminary with the firm resolution of surrendering life itself, if she found me cruel enough to withhold my forgiveness.

Could any savage remain unmoved by such proofs of cordial repentance as those I had just witnessed? For my part I felt at the moment that I could gladly have given up all the bishopricks in Christendom for Manon. I asked what course she would recommend in our present emergency. "It is necessary," she replied, "at all events, to quit the seminary and settle in some safer place." I consented to everything she proposed. She

withdrew.

got into her carriage to go and wait for me at the corner of the street. I escaped the next moment, without attracting the porter's notice. I entered the carriage, and we drove off to a Jew's. I there resumed my lay-dress and sword. Manon furnished the supplies, for I was without a *sum*, and fearing that I might meet with some new impediment, she would not consent to my returning to my room at St Sulpice for my purse. My finances were in truth wretchedly low, and hers more than sufficiently enriched by the liberality of M. de B——, to make her think lightly of my loss. We consulted together at the Jew's as to the course we should now adopt.

In order to enhance the sacrifice she had made for me of her late lover, she determined to treat him without the least ceremony. "I shall leave him all his furniture," she said; "it belongs to him; but I shall assuredly carry off, as I have a right to do, the jewels, and about sixty thousand francs, which I have had from him in the last two years. I have given him no control over me," she added, "so that we may remain without apprehension in Paris, taking a convenient house, where we may live happily together!"

I represented to her that, although there might be no danger for her, there was a great deal for me, who must be sooner or later infallibly recognised, and continually exposed to a repetition of the trials I had before endured. She gave me to understand that she could not quit Paris without regret. I had

such a dread of annoying her, that there were no risks I would not have encountered for her sake. However, we compromised matters by resolving to take a house in some village near Paris, from whence it would be easy for us to come into town whenever pleasure or business required it. We fixed on Chaillot, which is at a convenient distance. Manon at once returned to her house, and I went to wait for her at a side-gate of the garden of the Tuileries.

She returned an hour after, in a hired carriage, with a servant maid, and several trunks, which contained her dresses, and everything she had of value.

We were not long on our way to Chaillot. We lodged the first night at the inn, in order to have time to find a suitable house, or at least a commodious lodging. We found one to our taste the next morning.

My happiness now appeared to be secured beyond the reach of Fate. Manon was everything most sweet and amiable. She was so delicate and so unceasing in her attentions to me, that I deemed myself but too bountifully rewarded for all my past troubles. As we had both, by this time, acquired some experience, we discussed rationally the state of our finances. Sixty thousand francs (the amount of our wealth), was not a sum which could be expected to last our whole life; besides, we were neither of us much disposed to limit our expenses. Manon's chief virtue was assuredly not economy, any more than it was mine. This was

in ~~the~~ ^{his} foolishness ~~etc~~ ^{up a tree}
on which he and Manon shall live. He does not
realize that Manon can live only ~~shavily~~ ⁱⁿ
not at all.

his sense of civil ~~conduct~~ ^{is} in anything that
thwarts his love for Manon. He calculated on
leaving his ~~happy~~ ^{happy} Manon in ~~Paris~~ ^{Paris} because it will
further his love for Manon.

MANON LESCAUT.

my proposition. "Sixty thousand francs," said I,
"may support us for ten years. Two thousand
crowns a year will suffice, if we continue to live at
Chaillot. We shall keep up appearances, but live
frugally. Our only expense will be a carriage,
and the theatres. We shall do everything in
moderation. You like the Opera; we shall go twice
a week in the season. As for play, we shall limit
ourselves; so that our losses must never exceed two
crowns. It is impossible but that in the space of ten
years, some change must occur in my family: my
father is even now of an advanced age; he may die;
in which event I must inherit a fortune, and we shall
then be above all other fears."

This arrangement would not have been by any
means the most silly act of my life, if we had only
been prudent enough to persevere in its execution; but
our resolutions hardly lasted longer than a month.
Manon's passion was for amusement; she was the
only object of mine. New temptations to expense
constantly presented themselves, and far from regret-
ting the money which she sometimes prodigally
lavished, I was the first to procure for her everything
likely to afford her pleasure. Our residence at
Chaillot began even to appear tiresome to her.

Winter was approaching, and the whole world re-
turning to town; the country had a deserted look.
She proposed to me to take a house in Paris. I did
not approve of this; but, in order partly at least to

All ~~Passion~~ ^{Passion} in
destined in his
devotion to Manon
11. 14 in the
first to
encourage
his ~~passion~~ ^{passion}

satisfy her, I said that we might hire furnished apartments, and that we might sleep there whenever we were late in quitting the assembly, whither we often went ; for the inconvenience of returning so late to Chaillot was her excuse for wishing to leave it. We had thus two dwellings, one in town and the other in the country. This change soon threw our affairs into confusion, and led to two adventures, which eventually caused our ruin.

Manon had a brother in the Guards. He unfortunately lived in the very street in which we had taken lodgings. He one day recognised his sister at the window, and hastened over to us. He was a fellow of the rudest manners, and without the slightest principle of honour. He entered the room swearing in the most horrible way ; and as he knew part of his sister's history, he loaded her with abuse and reproaches.

I had gone out the moment before, which was doubtless fortunate for either him or me, for I was little disposed to brook an insult. I only returned to the lodgings after he had left them. The low spirits in which I found Manon convinced me at once that something extraordinary had occurred. She told me of the provoking scene she had just gone through, and of the brutal threats of her brother. I felt such indignation that I wished to proceed at once to avenge her, when she entreated me with tears to desist.

While we were still talking of the adventure, the

guardsman again entered the room in which we sat, without even waiting to be announced. Had I known him, he should not have met from me as civil a reception as he did ; but saluting us with a smile upon his countenance, he addressed himself to Manon, and said, he was come to make excuses for his violence ; that he had supposed her to be living a life of shame and disgrace, and it was this notion that excited his rage ; but having since made enquiry from one of our servants, he had learned such a character of me, that his only wish was now to be on terms with us both.

Although this admission, of having gone for information to one of my own servants, had in it something ludicrous as well as indelicate, I acknowledged his compliments with civility. I thought by doing so to please Manon,—she was delighted at the reconciliation. We made him stay to dinner.

In a little time he became so familiar, that hearing us speak of our return to Chaillot, he insisted on accompanying us. We were obliged to give him a seat in our carriage. This was in fact putting him into possession, for he soon began to feel so much pleasure in our company, that he made our house his home, and made himself in some measure master of all that belonged to us. He called me his brother, and, under the semblance of fraternal freedom, he put himself on such a footing as to introduce all his friends without ceremony into our house at Chaillot, and there entertain them at our expense. His magnificent

uniforms were procured of my tailor and charged to me, and he even contrived to make Manon and me responsible for all his debts. I pretended to be blind to this system of tyranny, rather than annoy Manon, and even to take no notice of the sums of money which from time to time he received from her. No doubt, as he played very deep, he was honest enough to repay her a part sometimes, when luck turned in his favour ; but our finances were utterly inadequate to supply, for any length of time, demands of such magnitude and frequency.

I was on the point of coming to an understanding with him, in order to put an end to the system, when an unfortunate accident saved me that trouble, by involving us in inextricable ruin.

One night we stopped at Paris to sleep, as it had now indeed become our constant habit. The servant maid, who on such occasions remained alone at Chaillot, came early the next morning to inform me that our house had taken fire in the night, and that the flames had been extinguished with great difficulty. I asked whether the furniture had suffered. She answered that there had been such confusion, owing to the multitude of strangers who came to offer assistance, that she could hardly ascertain what damage had been done. I was principally uneasy about our money, which had been locked up in a little box. I went off in haste to Chaillot. Vain hope ! the box had disappeared.

Des Grieux is enough of a realist to know that Manon will leave him as soon as their money is exhausted.

1. He will do anything to keep her.
2. He will readily take the advice of a man whom he knows is corrupt and shiftless and corrupt.

I discovered that one could love money without being a miser. This loss afflicted me to such a degree that I was almost out of my mind. I saw at one glance to what new calamities I should be exposed: poverty was the least of them. I knew Manon thoroughly; I had already had abundant proof that, although faithful and attached to me under happier circumstances, she could not be depended upon in want: pleasure and plenty she loved too well to sacrifice them for my sake. "I shall lose her!" I cried, "miserable Chevalier! you are about then to lose all that you love on earth!" This thought agitated me to such a degree that I actually for some moments considered whether it would not be best for me to end at once all my miseries by death. I however preserved presence of mind enough to reflect whether I was entirely without resource, and an idea occurred to me which quieted my despair. It would not be impossible, I thought, to conceal our loss from Manon; and I might, perhaps, discover some ways and means of supplying her, so as to ward off the inconveniences of poverty. SP. 41

I had calculated, thought I, in endeavouring to comfort myself that twenty thousand crowns would support us for ten years. Suppose that these ten years had now elapsed, and that none of the events which I had looked for in my family had occurred, what then would have been my course? I hardly know; but whatever I should then have done, why may I not do

it now ? How many are there in Paris, who have neither my talents, nor the natural advantages I possess : and who, notwithstanding, owe their support to the exercise of their talents, such as they are.

Has not Providence, I added, while reflecting on the different conditions of life, arranged things wisely ? The greater number of the powerful and the rich are fools. No one who knows anything of the world can doubt that. How admirable is the compensating justice thereof ! If wealth brought with it talent also, the rich would be too happy, and other men too wretched. To these latter are given personal advantages and genius, to help them out of misery and want. Some of them share the riches of the wealthy by administering to their pleasures, or by making them their dupes ; others afford them instruction, and endeavour to make them decent members of society : to be sure, they do not always succeed : but that was probably not the intention of divine wisdom. In every case they derive a benefit from their labours by living at the expense of their pupils ; and, in whatever point of view it is considered the follies of the rich are a bountiful source of revenue to the humbler classes.

These thoughts restored me a little to my spirits and to my reason. I determined first to consult M. Lescaut, the brother of Manon. He knew Paris perfectly ; and I had too many opportunities of learning that it was neither from his own estates, or from the king's pay, that he derived the principal portion

of his income. I had about thirty-three crowns left, which I fortunately happened to have about me. I showed him my purse, and explained to him my misfortune and my fears, and then asked him whether I had any alternative between starvation and blowing out my brains in despair. He coolly replied that suicide was the resource of fools. As to dying of want there were hundreds of men of genius who found themselves reduced to that state when they would not employ their talents; that it was for myself to discover what I was capable of doing, and he told me to reckon upon his assistance and his advice in any enterprise I might undertake.

"Vague enough, M. Lescaut!" said I to him: "My wants demand a speedy remedy; for what am I, to say to Manon?" "*Après* of Manon," replied he, "What is it that annoys you about her? Cannot you always find in her wherewithal to meet your wants, when you wish it? Such a person ought to support us all, you and me as well as herself." He cut short the answer which I was about to give to such impertinence, by going on to say, that before night he would ensure me a thousand crowns to divide between us, if I would only follow his advice; that he was acquainted with a nobleman, who was so liberal in matters of pleasure, that he was certain he would not hesitate for a moment to give the sum named for the favours of such a girl as Manon.

I stopped him. "I had a better opinion of you,"

said I. "I had imagined that your motive for bestowing your friendship upon me was very different indeed from the one you now betray." With the greatest effrontery he acknowledged that he had been always of the same mind, and that his sister having once sacrificed her virtue, though it might be to the man she most loved he would never have consented to a reconciliation with her, but with the hope of deriving some advantage from her past misconduct.

It was easy to see that we had been hitherto his dupes. Notwithstanding the disgust with which his proposition inspired me, still as I felt that I had occasion for his services, I said with apparent complacency, that we ought only to entertain such a plan as a last resource. I begged of him to suggest some other.

He proposed to me to turn my youth and the good looks Nature had bestowed upon me to some account, by establishing a liaison with some generous old dame. This was just as little to my taste, for it would have made me necessarily unfaithful to Manon.

I mentioned play as the easiest scheme, and the most suitable to my present situation. He admitted that play certainly was a resource, but that it was necessary to consider the point well. "Mere play," said he, "with its ordinary chances, is the certain road to ruin; and as for attempting, alone and without an ally, to employ the little means an adroit man has for correcting the vagaries of luck, it would be too

In Ginevra does not consider living up with an old man to be immoral in itself. Living objects because it would be unfaithful to Manon

dangerous an experiment. There was," he stated, "a third course, which was to enter into what he called a partnership; but he feared his confederates would consider my youth an objection to my admittance. He however promised to use his influence with them; and, what was more than I expected at his hands, he said that he would supply me with a little money whenever I had pressing occasion for any. The only favour I then asked of him was to say nothing to Manon of the loss I had experienced, nor of the subject of our conversation.)

— S. B. 42

I certainly derived little comfort from my visit to Lescaut; I felt even sorry for having confided my secret to him: not a single thing had he done for me that I might not just as well have done for myself without troubling him; and I could not help dreading that he would violate his promise to keep the secret from Manon. I had also reason to apprehend from his late avowals, that he might form the design of making use of her for his own vile purposes, or at least of advising her to quit me for some happier and more wealthy lover. This idea brought in its train a thousand reflections, which had no other effect than to torment me, and throw me into the state of despair in which I had passed the morning. It occurred to me, more than once, to write to my father; and to pretend a new reformation, in order to obtain some pecuniary assistance from him; but I could not forget that, notwithstanding all the natural love and affection

for me, he had shut me up for six months in a confined room for my first transgression ; and I was certain that, after the scandalous sensation caused by my flight from St. Sulpice, he would be sure to treat me with infinitely more rigour now.

At length out of this chaos of fancies came an idea that all at once restored peace to my mind, and which I was surprised of not having hit upon sooner : this was, to go again to my friend Tiberge, in whom I might be always sure of finding the same unflinching zeal and friendship. ~~There is nothing more glorious than the confidence with which one approaches a friend of tried integrity ; no apprehension, no risk of unkind repulse ; if it be not always in his power to afford the required succour, one is sure at least of meeting kindness and compassion.~~ The heart of the poor suppliant, which remains impenetrably closed to the rest of the world, opens in his presence, as a flower expands before the orb of day, from which it instinctively knows it can derive a cheering and benign influence only.

I considered it a blessing to have thought so *à propos* of Tiberge, and resolved to take measures to find him before evening. I returned at once to my lodgings to write a line, and fix a convenient place for our meeting. I requested secrecy and discretion, as the most important service he could render me under present circumstances.

*Virtue to
the spirit
be dignified
a favorable
response
in my heart
no. 61*

The pleasure I derived from the prospect of seeing Tiberge dissipated every trace of melancholy, which Manon would not have failed otherwise to detect in my countenance. I described our misfortune at Chaillot as a trifle which ought not to annoy her; and Paris being the spot she liked best in the world, she was not sorry to hear me say that it would be necessary for us to remain there entirely, until the little damage was repaired which had been caused by the fire at Chaillot.

In an hour I received an answer from Tiberge, who promised to be at the appointed rendezvous. I went there punctually. I certainly felt some shame at encountering a friend, whose presence alone ought to be a reproach to my iniquities; but I was supported by the opinion I had of the goodness of his heart, as well as my anxiety about Manon.

I had begged of him to meet me in the garden of the Palais Royal. He was there before me. He hastened towards me the moment he saw me approach, and pressed me in his arms, and I felt his cheeks wet with tears. I said that I could not help feeling perfectly ashamed to meet him, and that I was weighed down by a sense of my ingratitude; that the first thing I implored of him was to tell me whether I might still consider him my friend, after having so justly incurred the loss of his esteem and affection. He replied in the kindest possible manner, that it was not in the nature of

satisfy her, I said that we might hire furnished apartments, and that we might sleep there whenever we were late in quitting the assembly, whither we often went ; for the inconvenience of returning so late to Chaillot was her excuse for wishing to leave it. We had thus two dwellings, one in town and the other in the country. This change soon threw our affairs into confusion, and led to two adventures, which eventually caused our ruin.

Manon had a brother in the Guards. He unfortunately lived in the very street in which we had taken lodgings. He one day recognised his sister at the window, and hastened over to us. He was a fellow of the rudest manners, and without the slightest principle of honour. He entered the room swearing in the most horrible way ; and as he knew part of his sister's history, he loaded her with abuse and reproaches.

I had gone out the moment before, which was doubtless fortunate for either him or me, for I was little disposed to brook an insult. I only returned to the lodgings after he had left them. The low spirits in which I found Manon convinced me at once that something extraordinary had occurred. She told me of the provoking scene she had just gone through, and of the brutal threats of her brother. I felt such indignation that I wished to proceed at once to avenge her, when she entreated me with tears to desist.

While we were still talking of the adventure, the

guardsman again entered the room in which we sat, without even waiting to be announced. Had I known him, he should not have met from me as civil a reception as he did ; but saluting us with a smile upon his countenance, he addressed himself to Manon, and said, he was come to make excuses for his violence ; that he had supposed her to be living a life of shame and disgrace, and it was this notion that excited his rage ; but having since made enquiry from one of our servants, he had learned such a character of me, that his only wish was now to be on terms with us both.

Although this admission, of having gone for information to one of my own servants, had in it something ludicrous as well as indelicate, I acknowledged his compliments with civility. I thought by doing so to please Manon,—she was delighted at the reconciliation. We made him stay to dinner.

In a little time he became so familiar, that hearing us speak of our return to Chaillot, he insisted on accompanying us. We were obliged to give him a seat in our carriage. This was in fact putting him into possession, for he soon began to feel so much pleasure in our company, that he made our house his home, and made himself in some measure master of all that belonged to us. He called me his brother, and, under the semblance of fraternal freedom, he put himself on such a footing as to introduce all his friends without ceremony into our house at Chaillot, and there entertain them at our expense. His magnificent

uniforms were procured of my tailor and charged to me, and he even contrived to make Manon and me responsible for all his debts. I pretended to be blind to this system of tyranny, rather than annoy Manon, and even to take no notice of the sums of money which from time to time he received from her. No doubt, as he played very deep, he was honest enough to repay her a part sometimes, when luck turned in his favour ; but our finances were utterly inadequate to supply, for any length of time, demands of such magnitude and frequency.

I was on the point of coming to an understanding with him, in order to put an end to the system, when an unfortunate accident saved me that trouble, by involving us in inextricable ruin.

One night we stopped at Paris to sleep, as it had now indeed become our constant habit. The servant maid, who on such occasions remained alone at Chaillot, came early the next morning to inform me that our house had taken fire in the night, and that the flames had been extinguished with great difficulty. I asked whether the furniture had suffered. She answered that there had been such confusion, owing to the multitude of strangers who came to offer assistance, that she could hardly ascertain what damage had been done. I was principally uneasy about our money, which had been locked up in a little box. I went off in haste to Chaillot. Vain hope ! the box had disappeared.

Des Grieux is enough of a realist to know that Manon will leave him as soon as their money is exhausted.

1. He will do anything to keep her.
2. He will readily take the advice of a man whom he knows is corrupt and shiftless and corrupt.

I discovered that one could love money without being a miser. This loss afflicted me to such a degree that I was almost out of my mind. I saw at one glance to what new calamities I should be exposed: poverty was the least of them. I knew Manon thoroughly; I had already had abundant proof that, although faithful and attached to me under happier circumstances, she could not be depended upon in want: pleasure and plenty she loved too well to sacrifice them for my sake. "I shall lose her!" I cried, "miserable Chevalier! you are about then to lose all that you love on earth!" This thought agitated me to such a degree that I actually for some moments considered whether it would not be best for me to end at once all my miseries by death. I however preserved presence of mind enough to reflect whether I was entirely without resource, and an idea occurred to me which quieted my despair. It would not be impossible, I thought, to conceal our loss from Manon; and I might, perhaps, discover some ways and means of supplying her, so as to ward off the inconveniences of poverty.

I had calculated, thought I, in endeavouring to comfort myself that twenty thousand crowns would support us for ten years. Suppose that these ten years had now elapsed, and that none of the events which I had looked for in my family had occurred, what then would have been my course? I hardly know; but whatever I should then have done, why may I not do

Sp. 41

it now ? How many are there in Paris, who have neither my talents, nor the natural advantages I possess : and who, notwithstanding, owe their support to the exercise of their talents, such as they are.

Has not Providence, I added, while reflecting on the different conditions of life, arranged things wisely ? The greater number of the powerful and the rich are fools. No one who knows anything of the world can doubt that. How admirable is the compensating justice thereof ! If wealth brought with it talent also, the rich would be too happy, and other men too wretched. To these latter are given personal advantages and genius, to help them out of misery and want. Some of them share the riches of the wealthy by administering to their pleasures, or by making them their dupes ; others afford them instruction, and endeavour to make them decent members of society : to be sure, they do not always succeed : but that was probably not the intention of divine wisdom. In every case they derive a benefit from their labours by living at the expense of their pupils ; and, in whatever point of view it is considered the follies of the rich are a bountiful source of revenue to the humbler classes.

These thoughts restored me a little to my spirits and to my reason. I determined first to consult M. Lescaut, the brother of Manon. He knew Paris perfectly ; and I had too many opportunities of learning that it was neither from his own estates, or from the king's pay, that he derived the principal portion

*This edition is limited to 275 small-paper copies,
and 75 large-paper copies.*

COLLECTANEA ADAMANTÆA—XVII.

THE HISTORY OF
MANON LESCAUT

AND

The Chevalier des Grieux.

*A TRANSLATION FROM THE FRENCH
OF THE ABBÉ PRÉVOST*

BY

D. C. MOYLAN.

~~~~~  
Revised and Corrected by

**EDMUND GOLDSMID, F.R.H.S.,**  
F.S.A. (Scot.)

~~~~~  
IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.


—•—
PRIVATELY PRINTED.
EDINBURGH.

—
1886.



610 * 4





MANON LESCAUT.

VOLUME II.

MANON was a creature of most extraordinary disposition. Never had mortal a greater contempt for money, and yet she was haunted by a perpetual dread of wanting it. Her only desire was for pleasure and amusement. She would never have wished to possess a sou, if pleasure could be procured without money. She never even cared what our purse contained, provided she could pass the day agreeably ; so that, being neither fond of play, nor at all desirous of great wealth, nothing was more easy than to satisfy her, by daily finding out amusements suited to her tastes. But it became by habit a thing so absolutely necessary for her to have her mind thus occupied, that, without it, it was impossible to exercise the smallest influence over her temper or inclinations. Although she loved me tenderly, and I was the only person, as she often declared, in whose society she could ever find the real enjoyments of love, yet I felt thoroughly convinced that her attachment could not withstand certain apprehensions. She would have

preferred me, even with a moderate fortune, to the whole world; but I had no kind of doubt that she would, on the other hand, abandon me for some new
✓ M. de B——, when I had nothing more to offer her than fidelity and love.

I resolved, therefore, so to curtail my own individual expenses as to be able always to meet hers, and rather to deprive myself of a thousand necessities than even to limit her extravagance. The carriage made me more uneasy than anything else, for I saw no chance of being able to maintain either coachman or horses.

I told M. Lescaut of my difficulties, and did not conceal from him that I had received a thousand francs from a friend. He repeated that if I wished to try the chances of the gaming table, he was not without hopes that, by spending a few crowns in entertaining his associates, I might be, on his recommendation, admitted into the association. With all my repugnance to cheating, I yielded to dire necessity.

Lescaut presented me that night as a relation of his own. He added, that I was the more likely to succeed in my new profession, as I needed urgently the favours of Fortune. However, to show them that I was not quite reduced to the lowest ebb, he said it was my intention to treat them to supper. The offer was accepted, and I entertained them magnificently. They talked a good deal about my fashionable appearance, and the apparent amiability of my disposition; they

in France, realizing that to keep Manon to maintain
her spending money. Without this she can not be secure
if she is not amused. & will leave & go to the city
engaged in cheating at cards.

MANON LESCAUT.

7

said that the best hopes might be entertained of me, because there was something in my countenance that bespoke honesty: they voted thanks to Lescaut for having introduced so promising a novice, and deputed one of the members to instruct me for some days in the necessary manoeuvres.

The principal scene of my exploits was the Hotel of Transylvania, where there was a faro table in one room, and other games of cards and dice in the gallery. This academy was kept by the Prince of R——, who then lived at Clagny, and most of his officers belonged to our society. Shall I mention it to my shame? I profited quickly by my instructor's tuition. I acquired an amazing facility in sleight-of-hand tricks, and learned to perfection how to pass the card; with the help of a pair of long ruffles, I shuffled so adroitly as to defy the quickest observer, and I ruined several fair players. My unrivalled skill so quickened the progress of my fortunes, that I found myself master, in a few weeks, of very considerable sums, besides what I divided in good faith with my companions.

I had no longer any fear of communicating to Manon the extent of our loss at Chaillot, and, to console her for such disastrous news, I took a furnished house, where we established ourselves in all the pride of opulence and security.

Tiberge was in the habit at this period of paying me frequent visits. He was never tired of his moral

Look, I said, at Manon's eyes and tell me
if there is one in the long catalogue of sins that
might not there find a plea for justification

lectures. Over and over again did he represent to me the injury I was inflicting upon my conscience, my honour, and my fortune. I received all his advice kindly, and although I had not the smallest inclination to adopt it, I had no doubt of its sincerity, for I knew its source. Sometimes I rallied him good-humouredly, and entreated him not to be more tight-laced than some other priests were, and even bishops, who by no means considered a mistress incompatible with a good and holy life. "Look," I said, "at Manon's eyes, and tell me if there is one in the long catalogue of sins that might not there find a plea of justification." He bore these sallies patiently, and carried his forbearance to the furthest limit : but when he saw my funds increase, and that I had not only returned him the hundred and seventy crowns, but having hired a new house and trebled my expenses, I had plunged deeper than ever into a life of pleasure, he changed his tone and manner towards me. He lamented my obduracy. He warned me of the chastisements of Divine wrath, and predicted some of the miseries with which indeed I was shortly afterwards visited. "It is impossible," he said, "that the money which now serves to support your debaucheries can have been acquired honourably. You have come by it unjustly, and in the same way shall it be taken from you. The most awful punishment Heaven could inflict would be to allow you the undisturbed enjoyment of it. All my advice," he added, "has been useless ; I too plainly

perceive that it will shortly become troublesome to you. I now take my leave ; you are a weak, as well as an ungrateful friend ! May your criminal enjoyments vanish as a shadow ! may your ill-gotten wealth leave you without a resource ; and may you yourself remain alone and deserted, to learn the vanity of these things, which now divert you from better pursuits ! When that time arrives you will find me disposed to love and to serve you ; this day ends our intercourse, and I once for all avow my horror of the life you are leading."

It was in my room and in Manon's presence that he delivered this apostolic harangue. He rose to depart. I was about to detain him, but was prevented by Manon, who said it was better to let the madman go. — S. p. 48

What he said, however, did not fail to make some impression upon me. I notice these brief passages of my life when I experienced a returning sentiment of virtue, because it was to those traces, however light, that I was afterwards indebted for whatever of fortitude I displayed under the most trying circumstances.

Manon's caresses soon dissipated the annoyance this scene had caused me. We continued to lead a life entirely devoted to pleasure and love. The increase of our wealth only redoubled our affection. There were none happier among all the devotees of Venus and Fortune. Heavens ! why call this a world of misery, when it can furnish a life of such rapturous

enjoyment? But, alas, it is too soon over! For what ought Man to sigh, could such felicity but last for ever? Ours shared the common fate,—in being of short duration, and followed by lasting regrets

I had realised by play such a considerable sum of money, that I thought of investing a portion of it. My servants were not ignorant of my good luck, particularly my valet and Manon's own maid, before whom we often talked without any reserve. The maid was handsome, and my valet in love with her. They knew they had to deal with a young and inexperienced couple, whom they fancied they could impose upon without much difficulty. They laid a plan, and executed it with so much skill, that they reduced us to a state from which it was never afterwards possible for us to extricate ourselves.

Having supped one evening at Lescaut's, it was about midnight when we returned home. I asked for my valet, and Manon for her maid; neither one nor the other could be found. They had not been seen in the house since eight o'clock, and had gone out, after having some cases carried before them, according to orders which they pretended to have received from me. I at once foresaw a part of the truth, but my suspicions were infinitely surpassed by what presented itself on going into the room. The lock of my closet had been forced, and my cash as well as my best clothes were gone. While I stood stupefied with amazement, Manon came, in the greatest alarm, to

inform me that her apartment had been rifled in the same manner.

This blow was so perfectly astounding, so cruel, that it was with difficulty I could refrain from tears. The dread of causing pain to Manon made me assume a tranquil air. I said, smiling, that I should revenge myself upon some unhappy dupe at the Hotel of Transylvania. However, she appeared so sensibly affected, that her grief increased my sorrow infinitely more than my attempt succeeded in supporting her spirits. "We are ruined!" said she, with tears in her eyes. I endeavoured, in vain, by my caresses, to console her. My own lamentations betrayed my distress and despair. In fact we were so completely ruined, that we had neither shirt nor shift left.

I determined to send off at once for Lescaut. He advised me to go immediately to the Lieutenant of Police, and to give information also to the Grand Provost of Paris. I went, but it was to add to my calamities only; for, independently of my visit producing not the smallest good effect, I, by my absence, allowed Lescaut time for discussion with his sister, during which he did not fail to inspire her with the most horrible resolution. He spoke to her about M. G—— M——, an old voluptuary, who paid prodigally for his pleasures; he so glowingly described the advantages of such a connection, that she entered into all his plans. The discreditable arrangement was all concluded before my return, and the execution of

it only postponed till next morning, after Lescaut should have apprised G—— M——.

I found him on my return, waiting for me at my house ; but Manon had retired to her own apartment, and she had desired the footman to tell me that, having need of repose, she hoped she would not be disturbed that night. Lescaut left me, after offering me a few crowns, which I accepted.

It was nearly four o'clock when I retired to bed ; and having revolved in my mind various schemes for retrieving my fortunes, I fell asleep so late that I did not awake till between eleven and twelve o'clock. I arose at once to inquire after Manon's health ; they told me she had gone out an hour before with her brother, who had come for her in a hired carriage. Although there appeared something mysterious in such a proceeding, I endeavoured to check my rising suspicions. I allowed some hours to pass, during which I amused myself with reading. At length, being unable any longer to stifle my uneasiness, I paced up and down the apartments. A sealed letter on Manon's table at last caught my eye. It was addressed to me, and in her handwriting. I felt my blood freeze as I opened it ; it was in these words :

“ I protest to you, dearest chevalier, that you are the idol of my heart, and that you are the only being on earth whom I can truly love ; but do you not see, my own poor dear chevalier, that in the situation to which we are now reduced, fidelity would be worse

than madness? Do you think tenderness compatible with starvation? For my part, hunger would be sure to drive me to some fatal course. Heaving some day a sigh of love, I should find it was my last. I adore you, rely upon that; but leave to me, for a short while, the management of our fortunes. God help the man who falls into my hands. My only wish is to render my chevalier rich and happy. My brother will tell you about me; he can vouch for my grief in yielding to the necessity of parting from you."

S. p. 48

I remained, after reading this, in a state which it would be difficult to describe; for even now I know not the nature of the feelings which then agitated me. It was one of those unique situations which others can never have experienced in any degree. It is impossible to explain it, because other persons can have no idea of its nature; and one can hardly ever analyse it to oneself. Memory furnishes nothing that will connect it with the past, and it cannot be compared to anything known. Whatever was its nature, however, it is certain that grief, hate, jealousy, and shame entered into its composition. Fortunate would it have proved for me if Love also had not been a component part!

"That she loves me," I exclaimed, "I can believe but could she, without being a monster, hate me? What right can man ever have to woman's affections, which I have not to Manon's? What more can I do for her, after all the sacrifices I have made for her sake? Yet

she abandons me, and the ungrateful creature thinks to screen herself from my reproaches by professions of love ! She pretends to dread starvation ! God of Love, what grossness of sentiment ! What an answer to the refinement of my adoration ! I had no dread of that kind ; I, who have almost sought starvation for her sake, by renouncing fortune and the comforts of my father's house ! I, who denied myself actual necessities in order to gratify her little whims and caprices ! She adores me, she says. If you adored me, ungrateful creature, I well know whose advice you would have taken ; you would never have quitted me, at least, without saying adieu. It is only I who can tell the pangs and torments of being separated from all one loves. I must have taken leave of my senses, to have voluntarily brought all this misery upon myself !”

My lamentations were interrupted by a visit I little expected : it was from Lescaut. “Assassin !” cried I, putting my hand upon my sword, “where is Manon ? what have you done with her ?” My agitation startled him. He replied, “that if this was the reception he was to meet, when he came to offer me the most essential service it was in his power to render me, he should take his leave, and never again cross my threshold.” I ran to the door of the apartment, which I shut. “Do not imagine,” I said, turning towards him, “that you can once more make a dupe of me with your lies and inventions. Either defend

your life or tell me where I can find Manon." "How impatient you are!" replied he; "that was in reality the object of my visit. I came to announce a piece of good fortune which you little expected, and for which you will probably feel somewhat grateful." I demanded an explanation.

He informed me that Manon, totally unable to endure the dread of want, and, above all, the certainty of being at once obliged to dispense with her equipage, had begged of him to make her acquainted with M. G—— M——, who had a reputation for liberality. He carefully avoided telling me that this was the result of his own advice, and that he had prepared the way before he introduced his sister. "I took her there this morning," said he, "and the fellow was so enchanted with her looks that he at once invited her to accompany him to his country seat, where he is gone to pass some days. As I plainly perceived," said Lescaut, "the advantage it may be to you, I took care to let him know that she had lately experienced very considerable losses; and I so piqued his generosity that he began by giving her four hundred crowns. I told him that was well enough for a commencement, but that my sister would have, for the future, many demands for money; that she had the charge of a young brother, who had been thrown upon her hands since the death of our parents; and that, if he wished to prove himself worthy of her affections, he would not allow her to suffer uneasiness

on account of this child, whom she regarded as part of herself. This speech produced its effect ; he at once promised to take a house for you and Manon, for you must know that you are the poor little orphan. He undertook to set you up in furniture, and to give you four hundred livres a month, which, if I calculate rightly, will amount to four thousand eight hundred per annum. He left orders with his steward to look out for a house, and to have it in readiness by the time he returned. You will soon, therefore, again see Manon, who begged of me to give you a thousand tender messages, and to assure you that she loves you more dear'y than ever."

On sitting down to reflect upon this strange turn of Fate, I found myself so perplexed, and consequently so incapable of arriving at any rational conclusion, that I allowed Lescaut to put repeated questions to me without in the slightest degree attending to their purport. It was then that Honour and Virtue made me feel the most poignant remorse, and that I recalled with bitterness Amiens, my father's house, St. Sulpice, and every spot where I had ever lived in happy innocence. By what a terrific interval was I now separated from that blessed state ! I beheld it no longer but as a dim shadow in the distance, still attracting my regrets and desires, but without the power of rousing me to exertion. By what fatality, said I, have I become thus degraded ? Love is not a guilty passion ! Why then has it been to me the source of profligacy and

Can I calculate the Mass specific energy of the
fuel to lose the mass of the oxidation

Lescaut who had been considerably embarrassed, not only by my fury, but by the long silence which followed it, was too happy to see me now take a course so different from what he had anticipated. He had not a particle of courage, of which indeed I had, in the sequel of my story, abundant proof. "Yes, yes," he quickly answered, "It is good service I have rendered

you, and you will find that we shall derive infinitely more advantage from it than you now expect." We consulted then as to the best mode of preventing the suspicions which G—— M—— might entertain of our relationship, when he found me older and of riper manhood than he probably imagined. The only plan we could hit upon was to assume in his presence an innocent and provincial air, and to persuade him that it was my intention to enter the Church, and that with that view I was obliged to go every day to the College. We also determined that I should appear as badly dressed as I possibly could the first time I was admitted to the honour of an introduction.

He returned to town three or four days after, and at once conducted Manon to the house which his steward had in the meantime prepared. She immediately apprised Lescaut of her return, and he having informed me, we went together to her new abode. The old lover had already gone out.

In spite of the submission with which I had resigned myself to her wishes, I could not, at our meeting, repress the rebellings of my conscience. I appeared before her grieved and dejected. The joy I felt at seeing her once more could not altogether dispel my sorrow for her infidelity : she, on the contrary, appeared transported with the pleasure of seeing me. She accused me of coldness. I could not help muttering the words perfidious and unfaithful, though they were profusely mixed with sighs.

At first she laughed at me for my simplicity ; but when she found that I continued to look at her with an unchanging expression of melancholy, and that I could not bring myself to enter with alacrity into a scene so repugnant to all my feelings, she went alone into her boudoir. I very soon followed her, and then I found her in a flood of tears. I asked the cause of her sorrow. "You can easily understand it," said she ; "how can you wish me to live, if my presence can no longer have any other effect than to give you an air of sadness and chagrin ? Not one kiss have you given me during the long hour you have been in the house, while you have received my caresses with the dignified indifference of the Grand Turk in his Seraglio."

"Hearken to me, Manon," said I, embracing her ; "I cannot conceal from you that my heart is bitterly afflicted. I do not now allude to the uneasiness your sudden flight caused me, nor to the unkindness of quitting me without a word of consolation, after having passed the night away from me. The pleasure of seeing you again would more than compensate for all ; but do you imagine that I can reflect without sighs and tears upon the degrading and unhappy life which you now wish me to lead in this house. To say nothing of my birth, or my feelings of honour ; love like mine cannot weigh in the balance against arguments of that feeble nature ; but do you imagine that I can without emotion see my love so badly

recompensed, or rather so cruelly treated, by an ungrateful and unfeeling mistress ?”

She interrupted me. “Stop, Chevalier,” said she, “it is useless to torture me with reproaches, which, coming from you, always pierce my heart. I see what annoys you. I had hoped that you would have agreed to the project which I had devised for mending our shattered fortunes, and it was from a feeling of delicacy to you that I began the execution of it without your assistance ; but I give it up since it does not meet your approbation.” She added that she would now merely request a little patient forbearance during the remainder of the day ; that she had already received five hundred crowns from the old gentleman, and that he had promised to bring her that evening a magnificent pearl necklace with other jewels, and, in advance, half of the yearly pension he had engaged to allow her. “Leave me only time enough,” said she to me, “to get possession of these presents ; I promise you that he will have little to boast of from his connection with me, for in the country I repulsed all his advances, putting him off till our return to town. It is true that he has kissed my hand a thousand times over, and it is but just that he should pay for even this amusement : I am sure that, considering his riches as well as his age, five or six hundred francs is not an unreasonable price !”

Her determination was of more value in my eyes than twenty thousand crowns. I could feel that I

was not yet bereft of every sentiment of honour, by the satisfaction I experienced at escaping thus from infamy. But I was born for brief joys, and miseries of long duration. Fate never rescued me from one precipice, but to lead me to another. When I had expressed my delight to Manon at this change in her intentions by a thousand caresses, I told her she had better inform Lescaut of it, in order that we might take our measures in concert. At first he murmured, but the money in hand induced him to enter into our views. It was then determined that we should all meet at G—— M——'s supper table, and that, for two reasons: first, for the amusement of passing me off as a school boy, and brother to Manon; and secondly, to prevent the old profligate from taking any liberties with my mistress, on the strength of his liberal payments in advance. Lescaut and I were to retire, when he went to the room where he expected to pass the night; and Manon, instead of following him, promised to come out, and to spend it with me. Lescaut undertook to have a coach waiting at the door.

The supper hour having arrived, M. de G—— M—— made his appearance. Already Lescaut was with his sister in the supper room. The moment the lover entered, he presented his fair one with a complete set of pearls, necklace, earrings, and bracelets, which must have cost at least a thousand crowns. He then placed on the table before her, in louis d'or, two thousand

four hundred francs, the half of her year's allowance. He seasoned his present with many pretty speeches in the true style of the old court. Manon could not refuse him a few kisses : it was sealing her right to the money which he had just handed to her. I was at the door, and waiting for Lescaut's signal to enter the room.

He approached to take me by the hand, while Manon was securing the money and jewels, and leading me towards M. de G—— M——, he desired me to make my bow. I made two or three most profound ones. "Pray excuse him, Sir," said Lescaut, "he is a mere child. He has not yet acquired much of the *ton* of Paris ; but no doubt with a little trouble we shall improve him. You will often have the honour of seeing that gentleman here," said he, turning towards me ; "take advantage of it, and endeavour to imitate so good a model."

The old libertine appeared to be pleased with me. He patted me on the cheek, saying that I was a fine boy, but that I should be on my guard in Paris, where young men were easily debauched. Lescaut assured him that I was naturally of so grave a character that I thought of nothing but becoming a priest, and that, even as a child, my favourite amusement was building little chapels. "I fancy a likeness to Manon," said the old gentleman, putting his hand under my chin. I answered him with the most simple air,— "Sir, the fact is, that we are very closely connected,

and that I love my sister as another portion of myself." "Do you hear that?" said he to Lescaut; "he is indeed a clever boy! It is a pity he should not see something of the world." "Oh, Sir," I replied, "I have seen a great deal of it at home, attending church, and I believe I might find in Paris some greater fools than myself." "Listen!" said he; "it is positively wonderful in a boy from the country."

The whole conversation during supper was of the same kind. Manon, with her usual gaiety, was several times on the point of spoiling the joke by her bursts of laughter. I contrived, while eating, to recount his own identical history, and to paint even the fate that awaited him. Lescaut and Manon were in an agony of fear during my recital, especially while I was drawing his portrait to the life: but his own vanity prevented him from recognising it, and I did it so well that he was the first to pronounce it extremely laughable. You will allow that I had reason for dwelling on this ridiculous scene.

At length it was time to retire. Lescaut and I took our departure. G—— M—— went to his room, and Manon, making some excuse for her absence, came to join us at the gate. The coach that was waiting for us a few doors off drove up towards us, and we were out of the street in an instant.

Although I must confess that this proceeding appeared to me little short of actual robbery, it was not the most dishonest one with which I thought I had

to reproach myself. I had more scruples about the money which I had won at play. However, we derived as little advantage from the one as from the other ; and Heaven sometimes ordains that the lightest fault shall meet the severest punishment.

M. G—— M—— was not long in finding out that he had been duped. I am not sure whether he took any steps that night to discover us, but he had influence enough to ensure an effectual pursuit, and we were sufficiently imprudent to rely upon the extent of Paris, and the distance between our residence and his. Not only did he discover our abode and our circumstances, but also who I was—the life I had led in Paris—Manon's connection with B——, the manner in which she had deceived him : in a word, all the scandalous facts of our history. He therefore resolved to have us apprehended, and treated less as criminals than as vagabonds. An officer came abruptly one morning into our bedroom, with half a dozen archers of the guard. They first took possession of our money, or I should rather say, of G—— M——'s. They made us quickly get up, and conducted us to the door, where we found two coaches, into one of which they forced poor Manon, without any explanation, and I was taken in the other to St. Lazare.

One must have experienced this kind of reverse, to understand the despair that is caused by it. The police were savage enough to deny me the consolation of embracing Manon, or of bidding her farewell. I re-

mained for a long time ignorant of her fate. It was, perhaps, fortunate for me that I was kept in a state of ignorance, for had I known what she suffered, I should have lost my senses, probably my life.

My unhappy mistress was dragged then from my presence, and taken to a place the very name of which fills me with horror to remember. This to be the lot of a creature the most perfect, who must have shared the most splendid throne on earth, if other men had only seen and felt as I did! She was not treated harshly there, but was shut up in a narrow prison, and obliged, in solitary confinement, to perform a certain quantity of work each day, as a necessary condition for obtaining the most unpalatable food. I did not learn this till a long time after, when I had myself endured some months of rough and cruel treatment.

My guards not having told me where it was that they had been ordered to conduct me, it was only on my arrival at St Lazare that I learned my destination. I would have preferred death, at that moment, to the state into which I believed myself about to be thrown. I had the utmost terror of this place. My misery was increased by the guards, on my entrance, examining once more my pockets, to ascertain whether I had about me any arms or weapons of defence.

The Superior appeared. He had been informed of my apprehension. He saluted me with great mildness. "Do not, Father," said I to him "Allow

me to be treated with indignity. I would suffer a thousand deaths rather than quietly submit to degrading treatment." "No, no," he replied, "You will act quietly and prudently, and we shall be mutually content with each other." He begged of me to ascend to one of the highest rooms ; I followed him without a murmur. The archers accompanied us to the door, and the Superior, entering the room, made a sign for them to depart.

"I am your prisoner, I suppose?" said I; "Well, what do you intend to do with me?" He said, he was delighted to see me adopt so reasonable a tone; that it would be his duty to endeavour to inspire me with a taste for virtue and religion, and mine to profit by his exhortations and advice; that lightly as I might be disposed to rate his attentions to me, I should find nothing but enjoyment in my solitude. "Ah, enjoyment, indeed!" replied I; "You do not know, Father; the only thing on earth that could afford me enjoyment." "I know it," said he, "But I trust your inclinations will change." His answer showed that he had heard of my adventures, and perhaps of my name. I begged to know if such were the fact. He told me candidly that they had informed him of every particular.

The blow was the severest of any I had yet experienced. I literally shed a torrent of tears, in all the bitterness of unmixed despair; I could not reconcile myself to the humiliation which would make me a

is ~~shame~~ is ashamed really for the first time
 as he discovers the Superior knows all about him.
 thinks that because he is of different nation
 than most men, he suffers more from ridicule.
because he has a slight capacity, he is naturally conscious
 of seeing anything that detracts from it. He is
 full that other men will discover this defect.

MANON LESCAUT.

27

by-word of all my acquaintances, and the disgrace of
 my family. I passed a week in the most profound
 dejection, without being capable of gaining any infor-
 mation, or of occupying myself with anything but my
 own degradation. The remembrance even of Manon
 added nothing to my grief; It only occurred to me as
 a circumstance that had preceded my new sorrow;
 and the sense of shame and confusion was at present
 my all-absorbing passion.

There are few persons who have experienced the
 force of these special workings of the mind. The
 generality of men are only sensible of five or six
 passions in the limited round of which they pass their
 lives, and within which all their agitations are con-
 fined. Remove them from the influence of love and
 hate, pleasure and pain, hope and fear, and they have
 no further feeling. But persons of a finer cast can be
 affected in a thousand different ways; it would almost
 seem that they had more than five senses, and that
 they are accessible to ideas and sensations which far
 exceed the ordinary faculties of human nature; and,
 conscious that they possess a capacity which raises
them above the common herd, there is nothing of
 which they are more jealous. Hence springs their
 impatience under contempt and ridicule; and hence
 it is that a sense of debasement is perhaps the most
 violent of all their emotions.

I had this melancholy advantage at St Lazare. My
 grief appeared to the Superior so excessive, that, dread-

ing the consequences, he thought he was bound to treat me with more mildness and indulgence. He visited me two or three times a day ; he often made me take a turn with him in the garden, and showed his interest for me in his exhortations and good advice. I listened always attentively ; and warmly expressed my sense of his kindness, from which he derived hope of ultimate conversion.

"You appear to me," said he one day, "of a disposition so mild and tractable, that I cannot comprehend the excesses into which you have fallen. Two things astonish me : one is, how, with your good qualities, you could have ever abandoned yourself to vice ; and the other, which amazes me still more, is, how you can receive with such perfect temper my advice and instructions, after having lived so long in a course of debauchery. If it be sincere repentance, you present a singular example of the benign mercy of Heaven ; if it proceed from the natural goodness of your disposition then you certainly have that within you which warrants the hope that a protracted residence in this place will not be required to bring you back to a regular and respectable life.

I was delighted to find that he had such an opinion of me. I resolved to strengthen it by a continuance of good conduct, convinced that it was the surest means of abridging the term of my confinement. I begged of him to furnish me with books. He was agreeably surprised to find that when he requested me

to say what I should prefer, I mentioned only some religious and instructive works. I pretended to devote myself assiduously to study, and I thus gave him convincing proof of the moral reformation he was so anxious to bring about.

It was nothing, however, but rank hypocrisy—I blush to confess it. Instead of studying, when alone I did nothing but curse my destiny. I lavished the bitterest execrations on my prison, and the tyrants who detained me there. If I ceased for a moment from these lamentations, it was only to relapse into the tormenting remembrance of my love. Manon's absence,—the mystery in which her fate was veiled,—the dread of never again beholding her; these formed the subject of my melancholy thoughts. I fancied her in the arms of G—— M——. Far from imagining that he could have been brute enough to subject her to the same treatment to which I was condemned, I felt persuaded that he had only procured my removal in order that he might possess her undisturbed.

Oh! how miserable were the days and nights I thus passed! They seemed to be of endless duration. My only hope of escape, now, was in hypocrisy; I scrutinised the countenance, and carefully marked every observation that fell from the Superior, in order to ascertain what he really thought of me; and looking on him as the sole arbiter of my future fate, I made it my study to win, if possible, his favour. I

soon had the satisfaction to find that I was firmly established in his good graces, and no longer doubted his disposition to befriend me.

I one day ventured to ask him whether my liberation depended on him. He replied that it was not altogether in his hands, but that he had no doubt that on his representation M. de G—— M——, at whose instance the lieutenant-general of police had ordered me to be confined, would consent to my being set at liberty. "May I flatter myself," rejoined I, in the mildest tone, "that he will consider two months, which I have now spent in this prison, as a sufficient atonement?" He offered to speak to him if I wished, it. I implored him without delay to do me that favour.

He told me two days afterwards that G—— M—— was so sensibly affected by what he had heard that he not only was ready to consent to my liberation, but that he had even expressed a strong desire to become better acquainted with me, and that he himself purposed to pay me a visit in prison. Although his presence could not afford me much pleasure, I looked upon it as a certain prelude to my liberation.

He accordingly came to St. Lazare. I met him with an air more grave and certainly less silly than I had exhibited at his house with Manon. He spoke reasonably enough of my former bad conduct. He added, as if to excuse his own delinquencies, that it was graciously permitted to the weakness of man to

indulge in certain pleasures, but that dishonesty and such like shameful practices ought to be, and always would be, inexorably punished.

I listened to all he said with an air of submission, which quite charmed him. I betrayed no symptoms of annoyance even at some jokes in which he indulged about my relationship with Manon and Lescaut, and about the little chapels of which he supposed I must have had time to erect a great many in St. Lazare, as I was so fond of that occupation. But he happened, unluckily both for me and for himself, to add, that he hoped Manon had also employed herself in the same edifying manner at the Magdalen Hospital. Notwithstanding the thrill of horror I felt at the sound of the name, I had still presence of mind enough to beg, in the gentlest manner, that he would explain himself. "Oh yes!" he replied, "she has been these last two months at the Magdalen Hospital learning to be prudent, and I trust she has improved herself as much there, as you have done at St. Lazare!"

If an eternal imprisonment, or death itself, had been presented to my view, I could not have restrained the excitement into which this afflicting announcement threw me. I flung myself upon him in so violent a rage that half my strength was exhausted by the effort. I had, however, more than enough left to drag him to the ground and grasp him by the throat. I should infallibly have strangled him, if his fall, and the half-stifled cries which he had still the power to utter,

four hundred francs, the half of her year's allowance. He seasoned his present with many pretty speeches in the true style of the old court. Manon could not refuse him a few kisses: it was sealing her right to the money which he had just handed to her. I was at the door, and waiting for Lescaut's signal to enter the room.

He approached to take me by the hand, while Manon was securing the money and jewels, and leading me towards M. de G—— M——, he desired me to make my bow. I made two or three most profound ones. "Pray excuse him, Sir," said Lescaut, "he is a mere child. He has not yet acquired much of the *ton* of Paris; but no doubt with a little trouble we shall improve him. You will often have the honour of seeing that gentleman here," said he, turning towards me; "take advantage of it, and endeavour to imitate so good a model."

The old libertine appeared to be pleased with me. He patted me on the cheek, saying that I was a fine boy, but that I should be on my guard in Paris, where young men were easily debauched. Lescaut assured him that I was naturally of so grave a character that I thought of nothing but becoming a priest, and that, even as a child, my favourite amusement was building little chapels. "I fancy a likeness to Manon," said the old gentleman, putting his hand under my chin. I answered him with the most simple air,— "Sir, the fact is, that we are very closely connected,

and that I love my sister as another portion of myself." "Do you hear that?" said he to Lescaut; "he is indeed a clever boy! It is a pity he should not see something of the world." "Oh, Sir," I replied, "I have seen a great deal of it at home, attending church, and I believe I might find in Paris some greater fools than myself." "Listen!" said he; "it is positively wonderful in a boy from the country."

The whole conversation during supper was of the same kind. Manon, with her usual gaiety, was several times on the point of spoiling the joke by her bursts of laughter. I contrived, while eating, to recount his own identical history, and to paint even the fate that awaited him. Lescaut and Manon were in an agony of fear during my recital, especially while I was drawing his portrait to the life: but his own vanity prevented him from recognising it, and I did it so well that he was the first to pronounce it extremely laughable. You will allow that I had reason for dwelling on this ridiculous scene.

At length it was time to retire. Lescaut and I took our departure. G—— M—— went to his room, and Manon, making some excuse for her absence, came to join us at the gate. The coach that was waiting for us a few doors off drove up towards us, and we were out of the street in an instant.

Although I must confess that this proceeding appeared to me little short of actual robbery, it was not the most dishonest one with which I thought I had

to reproach myself. I had more scruples about the money which I had won at play. However, we derived as little advantage from the one as from the other ; and Heaven sometimes ordains that the lightest fault shall meet the severest punishment.

M. G—— M—— was not long in finding out that he had been duped. I am not sure whether he took any steps that night to discover us, but he had influence enough to ensure an effectual pursuit, and we were sufficiently imprudent to rely upon the extent of Paris, and the distance between our residence and his. Not only did he discover our abode and our circumstances, but also who I was—the life I had led in Paris—Manon's connection with B——, the manner in which she had deceived him : in a word, all the scandalous facts of our history. He therefore resolved to have us apprehended, and treated less as criminals than as vagabonds. An officer came abruptly one morning into our bedroom, with half a dozen archers of the guard. They first took possession of our money, or I should rather say, of G—— M——'s. They made us quickly get up, and conducted us to the door, where we found two coaches, into one of which they forced poor Manon, without any explanation, and I was taken in the other to St. Lazare.

One must have experienced this kind of reverse, to understand the despair that is caused by it. The police were savage enough to deny me the consolation of embracing Manon, or of bidding her farewell. I re-

mained for a long time ignorant of her fate. It was, perhaps, fortunate for me that I was kept in a state of ignorance, for had I known what she suffered, I should have lost my senses, probably my life.

My unhappy mistress was dragged then from my presence, and taken to a place the very name of which fills me with horror to remember. This to be the lot of a creature the most perfect, who must have shared the most splendid throne on earth, if other men had only seen and felt as I did! She was not treated harshly there, but was shut up in a narrow prison, and obliged, in solitary confinement, to perform a certain quantity of work each day, as a necessary condition for obtaining the most unpalatable food. I did not learn this till a long time after, when I had myself endured some months of rough and cruel treatment.

My guards not having told me where it was that they had been ordered to conduct me, it was only on my arrival at St Lazare that I learned my destination. I would have preferred death, at that moment, to the state into which I believed myself about to be thrown. I had the utmost terror of this place. My misery was increased by the guards, on my entrance, examining once more my pockets, to ascertain whether I had about me any arms or weapons of defence.

The Superior appeared. He had been informed of my apprehension. He saluted me with great mildness. "Do not, Father," said I to him "Allow

me to be treated with indignity. I would suffer a thousand deaths rather than quietly submit to degrading treatment." "No, no," he replied, "You will act quietly and prudently, and we shall be mutually content with each other." He begged of me to ascend to one of the highest rooms ; I followed him without a murmur. The archers accompanied us to the door, and the Superior, entering the room, made a sign for them to depart.

"I am your prisoner, I suppose?" said I; "Well, what do you intend to do with me?" He said, he was delighted to see me adopt so reasonable a tone; that it would be his duty to endeavour to inspire me with a taste for virtue and religion, and mine to profit by his exhortations and advice; that lightly as I might be disposed to rate his attentions to me, I should find nothing but enjoyment in my solitude. "Ah, enjoyment, indeed!" replied I; "You do not know, Father; the only thing on earth that could afford me enjoyment." "I know it," said he, "But I trust your inclinations will change." His answer showed that he had heard of my adventures, and perhaps of my name. I begged to know if such were the fact. He told me candidly that they had informed him of every particular.

The blow was the severest of any I had yet experienced. I literally shed a torrent of tears, in all the bitterness of unmixed despair; I could not reconcile myself to the humiliation which would make me a

Manon is ashamed really for the first time
he discovers the Superior knows all about him.
He thinks that because he is of different nation
than most men, he suffers more from ridicule.
because he has a slight capacity, he is naturally conscious
of everything that detracts from it. He is
sure that others will discover this higher
MANON LESCAUT. 27

it is not
a mere
self

by-word of all my acquaintances, and the disgrace of
my family. I passed a week in the most profound
dejection, without being capable of gaining any infor-
mation, or of occupying myself with anything but my
own degradation. The remembrance even of Manon
added nothing to my grief; It only occurred to me as
a circumstance that had preceded my new sorrow;
and the sense of shame and confusion was at present
my all-absorbing passion.

There are few persons who have experienced the
force of these special workings of the mind. The
generality of men are only sensible of five or six
passions in the limited round of which they pass their
lives, and within which all their agitations are con-
fined. Remove them from the influence of love and
hate, pleasure and pain, hope and fear, and they have
no further feeling. But persons of a finer cast can be
affected in a thousand different ways; it would almost
seem that they had more than five senses, and that
they are accessible to ideas and sensations which far
exceed the ordinary faculties of human nature; and,
conscious that they possess a capacity which raises
them above the common herd, there is nothing of
which they are more jealous. Hence springs their
impatience under contempt and ridicule; and hence
it is that a sense of debasement is perhaps the most
violent of all their emotions.

I had this melancholy advantage at St Lazare. My
grief appeared to the Superior so excessive, that, dread-

ing the consequences, he thought he was bound to treat me with more mildness and indulgence. He visited me two or three times a day ; he often made me take a turn with him in the garden, and showed his interest for me in his exhortations and good advice. I listened always attentively ; and warmly expressed my sense of his kindness, from which he derived hope of ultimate conversion.

"You appear to me," said he one day, "of a disposition so mild and tractable, that I cannot comprehend the excesses into which you have fallen. Two things astonish me : one is, how, with your good qualities, you could have ever abandoned yourself to vice ; and the other, which amazes me still more, is, how you can receive with such perfect temper my advice and instructions, after having lived so long in a course of debauchery. If it be sincere repentance, you present a singular example of the benign mercy of Heaven ; if it proceed from the natural goodness of your disposition then you certainly have that within you which warrants the hope that a protracted residence in this place will not be required to bring you back to a regular and respectable life.

I was delighted to find that he had such an opinion of me. I resolved to strengthen it by a continuance of good conduct, convinced that it was the surest means of abridging the term of my confinement. I begged of him to furnish me with books. He was agreeably surprised to find that when he requested me

to say what I should prefer, I mentioned only some religious and instructive works. I pretended to devote myself assiduously to study, and I thus gave him convincing proof of the moral reformation he was so anxious to bring about.

It was nothing, however, but rank hypocrisy—I blush to confess it. Instead of studying, when alone I did nothing but curse my destiny. I lavished the bitterest execrations on my prison, and the tyrants who detained me there. If I ceased for a moment from these lamentations, it was only to relapse into the tormenting remembrance of my love. Manon's absence,—the mystery in which her fate was veiled,—the dread of never again beholding her; these formed the subject of my melancholy thoughts. I fancied her in the arms of G—— M——. Far from imagining that he could have been brute enough to subject her to the same treatment to which I was condemned, I felt persuaded that he had only procured my removal in order that he might possess her undisturbed.

Oh! how miserable were the days and nights I thus passed! They seemed to be of endless duration. My only hope of escape, now, was in hypocrisy; I scrutinised the countenance, and carefully marked every observation that fell from the Superior, in order to ascertain what he really thought of me; and looking on him as the sole arbiter of my future fate, I made it my study to win, if possible, his favour. I

soon had the satisfaction to find that I was firmly established in his good graces, and no longer doubted his disposition to befriend me.

I one day ventured to ask him whether my liberation depended on him. He replied that it was not altogether in his hands, but that he had no doubt that on his representation M. de G—— M——, at whose instance the lieutenant-general of police had ordered me to be confined, would consent to my being set at liberty. "May I flatter myself," rejoined I, in the mildest tone, "that he will consider two months, which I have now spent in this prison, as a sufficient atonement?" He offered to speak to him if I wished, it. I implored him without delay to do me that favour.

He told me two days afterwards that G—— M—— was so sensibly affected by what he had heard that he not only was ready to consent to my liberation, but that he had even expressed a strong desire to become better acquainted with me, and that he himself purposed to pay me a visit in prison. Although his presence could not afford me much pleasure, I looked upon it as a certain prelude to my liberation.

He accordingly came to St. Lazare. I met him with an air more grave and certainly less silly than I had exhibited at his house with Manon. He spoke reasonably enough of my former bad conduct. He added, as if to excuse his own delinquencies, that it was graciously permitted to the weakness of man to

indulge in certain pleasures, but that dishonesty and such like shameful practices ought to be, and always would be, inexorably punished.

I listened to all he said with an air of submission, which quite charmed him. I betrayed no symptoms of annoyance even at some jokes in which he indulged about my relationship with Manon and Lescaut, and about the little chapels of which he supposed I must have had time to erect a great many in St. Lazare, as I was so fond of that occupation. But he happened, unluckily both for me and for himself, to add, that he hoped Manon had also employed herself in the same edifying manner at the Magdalen Hospital. Notwithstanding the thrill of horror I felt at the sound of the name, I had still presence of mind enough to beg, in the gentlest manner, that he would explain himself. "Oh yes!" he replied, "she has been these last two months at the Magdalen Hospital learning to be prudent, and I trust she has improved herself as much there, as you have done at St. Lazare!"

If an eternal imprisonment, or death itself, had been presented to my view, I could not have restrained the excitement into which this afflicting announcement threw me. I flung myself upon him in so violent a rage that half my strength was exhausted by the effort. I had, however, more than enough left to drag him to the ground and grasp him by the throat. I should infallibly have strangled him, if his fall, and the half-stifled cries which he had still the power to utter,

four hundred francs, the half of her year's allowance. He seasoned his present with many pretty speeches in the true style of the old court. Manon could not refuse him a few kisses : it was sealing her right to the money which he had just handed to her. I was at the door, and waiting for Lescaut's signal to enter the room.

He approached to take me by the hand, while Manon was securing the money and jewels, and leading me towards M. de G—— M——, he desired me to make my bow. I made two or three most profound ones. "Pray excuse him, Sir," said Lescaut, "he is a mere child. He has not yet acquired much of the *ton* of Paris ; but no doubt with a little trouble we shall improve him. Yon will often have the honour of seeing that gentleman here," said he, turning towards me ; "take advantage of it, and endeavour to imitate so good a model."

The old libertine appeared to be pleased with me. He patted me on the cheek, saying that I was a fine boy, but that I should be on my guard in Paris, where young men were easily debauched. Lescaut assured him that I was naturally of so grave a character that I thought of nothing but becoming a priest, and that, even as a child, my favourite amusement was building little chapels. "I fancy a likeness to Manon," said the old gentleman, putting his hand under my chin. I answered him with the most simple air,— "Sir, the fact is, that we are very closely connected,

and that I love my sister as another portion of myself." "Do you hear that?" said he to Lescaut; "he is indeed a clever boy! It is a pity he should not see something of the world." "Oh, Sir," I replied, "I have seen a great deal of it at home, attending church, and I believe I might find in Paris some greater fools than myself." "Listen!" said he; "it is positively wonderful in a boy from the country."

The whole conversation during supper was of the same kind. Manon, with her usual gaiety, was several times on the point of spoiling the joke by her bursts of laughter. I contrived, while eating, to recount his own identical history, and to paint even the fate that awaited him. Lescaut and Manon were in an agony of fear during my recital, especially while I was drawing his portrait to the life: but his own vanity prevented him from recognising it, and I did it so well that he was the first to pronounce it extremely laughable. You will allow that I had reason for dwelling on this ridiculous scene.

At length it was time to retire. Lescaut and I took our departure. G—— M—— went to his room, and Manon, making some excuse for her absence, came to join us at the gate. The coach that was waiting for us a few doors off drove up towards us, and we were out of the street in an instant.

Although I must confess that this proceeding appeared to me little short of actual robbery, it was not the most dishonest one with which I thought I had

to reproach myself. I had more scruples about the money which I had won at play. However, we derived as little advantage from the one as from the other ; and Heaven sometimes ordains that the lightest fault shall meet the severest punishment.

M. G—— M—— was not long in finding out that he had been duped. I am not sure whether he took any steps that night to discover us, but he had influence enough to ensure an effectual pursuit, and we were sufficiently imprudent to rely upon the extent of Paris, and the distance between our residence and his. Not only did he discover our abode and our circumstances, but also who I was—the life I had led in Paris—Manon's connection with B——, the manner in which she had deceived him : in a word, all the scandalous facts of our history. He therefore resolved to have us apprehended, and treated less as criminals than as vagabonds. An officer came abruptly one morning into our bedroom, with half a dozen archers of the guard. They first took possession of our money, or I should rather say, of G—— M——'s. They made us quickly get up, and conducted us to the door, where we found two coaches, into one of which they forced poor Manon, without any explanation, and I was taken in the other to St. Lazare.

One must have experienced this kind of reverse, to understand the despair that is caused by it. The police were savage enough to deny me the consolation of embracing Manon, or of bidding her farewell. I re-

mained for a long time ignorant of her fate. It was, perhaps, fortunate for me that I was kept in a state of ignorance, for had I known what she suffered, I should have lost my senses, probably my life.

My unhappy mistress was dragged then from my presence, and taken to a place the very name of which fills me with horror to remember. This to be the lot of a creature the most perfect, who must have shared the most splendid throne on earth, if other men had only seen and felt as I did! She was not treated harshly there, but was shut up in a narrow prison, and obliged, in solitary confinement, to perform a certain quantity of work each day, as a necessary condition for obtaining the most unpalatable food. I did not learn this till a long time after, when I had myself endured some months of rough and cruel treatment.

My guards not having told me where it was that they had been ordered to conduct me, it was only on my arrival at St Lazare that I learned my destination. I would have preferred death, at that moment, to the state into which I believed myself about to be thrown. I had the utmost terror of this place. My misery was increased by the guards, on my entrance, examining once more my pockets, to ascertain whether I had about me any arms or weapons of defence.

The Superior appeared. He had been informed of my apprehension. He saluted me with great mildness. "Do not, Father," said I to him "Allow

me to be treated with indignity. I would suffer a thousand deaths rather than quietly submit to degrading treatment." "No, no," he replied, "You will act quietly and prudently, and we shall be mutually content with each other." He begged of me to ascend to one of the highest rooms ; I followed him without a murmur. The archers accompanied us to the door, and the Superior, entering the room, made a sign for them to depart.

"I am your prisoner, I suppose?" said I; "Well, what do you intend to do with me?" He said, he was delighted to see me adopt so reasonable a tone; that it would be his duty to endeavour to inspire me with a taste for virtue and religion, and mine to profit by his exhortations and advice; that lightly as I might be disposed to rate his attentions to me, I should find nothing but enjoyment in my solitude. "Ah, enjoyment, indeed!" replied I; "You do not know, Father; the only thing on earth that could afford me enjoyment." "I know it," said he, "But I trust your inclinations will change." His answer showed that he had heard of my adventures, and perhaps of my name. I begged to know if such were the fact. He told me candidly that they had informed him of every particular.

The blow was the severest of any I had yet experienced. I literally shed a torrent of tears, in all the bitterness of unmingled despair; I could not reconcile myself to the humiliation which would make me a

& St. Laurent is ashamed really for the first time
 as he discovers the Superior knows all about him.
 He thinks that because he is of different nation
 than most men, he suffers more from ridicule.
consequently he has a slight capacity, he is naturally conscious
 of agents anything that attracts himself. He is
 full that others will discover this defect.

MANON LESCAUT.

27

is not
 only
 will
 self

by-word of all my acquaintances, and the disgrace of
 my family. I passed a week in the most profound
 dejection, without being capable of gaining any infor-
 mation, or of occupying myself with anything but my
 own degradation. The remembrance even of Manon
 added nothing to my grief; It only occurred to me as
 a circumstance that had preceded my new sorrow;
 and the sense of shame and confusion was at present
 my all-absorbing passion.

There are few persons who have experienced the
 force of these special workings of the mind. The
 generality of men are only sensible of five or six
 passions in the limited round of which they pass their
 lives, and within which all their agitations are con-
 fined. Remove them from the influence of love and
 hate, pleasure and pain, hope and fear, and they have
 no further feeling. But persons of a finer cast can be
 affected in a thousand different ways; it would almost
 seem that they had more than five senses, and that
 they are accessible to ideas and sensations which far
 exceed the ordinary faculties of human nature; and,
 conscious that they possess a capacity which raises
them above the common herd, there is nothing of
 which they are more jealous. Hence springs their
 impatience under contempt and ridicule; and hence
 it is that a sense of debasement is perhaps the most
 violent of all their emotions.

I had this melancholy advantage at St Lazare. My
 grief appeared to the Superior so excessive, that, dread-

ing the consequences, he thought he was bound to treat me with more mildness and indulgence. He visited me two or three times a day ; he often made me take a turn with him in the garden, and showed his interest for me in his exhortations and good advice. I listened always attentively ; and warmly expressed my sense of his kindness, from which he derived hope of ultimate conversion.

"You appear to me," said he one day, "of a disposition so mild and tractable, that I cannot comprehend the excesses into which you have fallen. Two things astonish me : one is, how, with your good qualities, you could have ever abandoned yourself to vice ; and the other, which amazes me still more, is, how you can receive with such perfect temper my advice and instructions, after having lived so long in a course of debauchery. If it be sincere repentance, you present a singular example of the benign mercy of Heaven ; if it proceed from the natural goodness of your disposition then you certainly have that within you which warrants the hope that a protracted residence in this place will not be required to bring you back to a regular and respectable life.

I was delighted to find that he had such an opinion of me. I resolved to strengthen it by a continuance of good conduct, convinced that it was the surest means of abridging the term of my confinement. I begged of him to furnish me with books. He was agreeably surprised to find that when he requested me

to say what I should prefer, I mentioned only some religious and instructive works. I pretended to devote myself assiduously to study, and I thus gave him convincing proof of the moral reformation he was so anxious to bring about.

It was nothing, however, but rank hypocrisy—I blush to confess it. Instead of studying, when alone I did nothing but curse my destiny. I lavished the bitterest execrations on my prison, and the tyrants who detained me there. If I ceased for a moment from these lamentations, it was only to relapse into the tormenting remembrance of my love. Manon's absence,—the mystery in which her fate was veiled,—the dread of never again beholding her; these formed the subject of my melancholy thoughts. I fancied her in the arms of G—— M——. Far from imagining that he could have been brute enough to subject her to the same treatment to which I was condemned, I felt persuaded that he had only procured my removal in order that he might possess her undisturbed.

Oh! how miserable were the days and nights I thus passed! They seemed to be of endless duration. My only hope of escape, now, was in hypocrisy; I scrutinised the countenance, and carefully marked every observation that fell from the Superior, in order to ascertain what he really thought of me; and looking on him as the sole arbiter of my future fate, I made it my study to win, if possible, his favour. I

soon had the satisfaction to find that I was firmly established in his good graces, and no longer doubted his disposition to befriend me.

I one day ventured to ask him whether my liberation depended on him. He replied that it was not altogether in his hands, but that he had no doubt that on his representation M. de G—— M——, at whose instance the lieutenant-general of police had ordered me to be confined, would consent to my being set at liberty. "May I flatter myself," rejoined I, in the mildest tone, "that he will consider two months, which I have now spent in this prison, as a sufficient atonement?" He offered to speak to him if I wished, it. I implored him without delay to do me that favour.

He told me two days afterwards that G—— M—— was so sensibly affected by what he had heard that he not only was ready to consent to my liberation, but that he had even expressed a strong desire to become better acquainted with me, and that he himself purposed to pay me a visit in prison. Although his presence could not afford me much pleasure, I looked upon it as a certain prelude to my liberation.

He accordingly came to St. Lazare. I met him with an air more grave and certainly less silly than I had exhibited at his house with Manon. He spoke reasonably enough of my former bad conduct. He added, as if to excuse his own delinquencies, that it was graciously permitted to the weakness of man to

indulge in certain pleasures, but that dishonesty and such like shameful practices ought to be, and always would be, inexorably punished.

I listened to all he said with an air of submission, which quite charmed him. I betrayed no symptoms of annoyance even at some jokes in which he indulged about my relationship with Manon and Lescaut, and about the little chapels of which he supposed I must have had time to erect a great many in St. Lazare, as I was so fond of that occupation. But he happened, unluckily both for me and for himself, to add, that he hoped Manon had also employed herself in the same edifying manner at the Magdalen Hospital. Notwithstanding the thrill of horror I felt at the sound of the name, I had still presence of mind enough to beg, in the gentlest manner, that he would explain himself. "Oh yes!" he replied, "she has been these last two months at the Magdalen Hospital learning to be prudent, and I trust she has improved herself as much there, as you have done at St. Lazare!"

If an eternal imprisonment, or death itself, had been presented to my view, I could not have restrained the excitement into which this afflicting announcement threw me. I flung myself upon him in so violent a rage that half my strength was exhausted by the effort. I had, however, more than enough left to drag him to the ground and grasp him by the throat. I should infallibly have strangled him, if his fall, and the half-stifled cries which he had still the power to utter,

four hundred francs, the half of her year's allowance. He seasoned his present with many pretty speeches in the true style of the old court. Manon could not refuse him a few kisses : it was sealing her right to the money which he had just handed to her. I was at the door, and waiting for Lescaut's signal to enter the room.

He approached to take me by the hand, while Manon was securing the money and jewels, and leading me towards M. de G—— M——, he desired me to make my bow. I made two or three most profound ones. "Pray excuse him, Sir," said Lescaut, "he is a mere child. He has not yet acquired much of the *ton* of Paris ; but no doubt with a little trouble we shall improve him. Yon will often have the honour of seeing that gentleman here," said he, turning towards me ; "take advantage of it, and endeavour to imitate so good a model."

The old libertine appeared to be pleased with me. He patted me on the cheek, saying that I was a fine boy, but that I should be on my guard in Paris, where young men were easily debauched. Lescaut assured him that I was naturally of so grave a character that I thought of nothing but becoming a priest, and that, even as a child, my favourite amusement was building little chapels. "I fancy a likeness to Manon," said the old gentleman, putting his hand under my chin. I answered him with the most simple air,— "Sir, the fact is, that we are very closely connected,

and that I love my sister as another portion of myself." "Do you hear that?" said he to Lescaut; "he is indeed a clever boy! It is a pity he should not see something of the world." "Oh, Sir," I replied, "I have seen a great deal of it at home, attending church, and I believe I might find in Paris some greater fools than myself." "Listen!" said he; "it is positively wonderful in a boy from the country."

The whole conversation during supper was of the same kind. Manon, with her usual gaiety, was several times on the point of spoiling the joke by her bursts of laughter. I contrived, while eating, to recount his own identical history, and to paint even the fate that awaited him. Lescaut and Manon were in an agony of fear during my recital, especially while I was drawing his portrait to the life: but his own vanity prevented him from recognising it, and I did it so well that he was the first to pronounce it extremely laughable. You will allow that I had reason for dwelling on this ridiculous scene.

At length it was time to retire. Lescaut and I took our departure. G—— M—— went to his room, and Manon, making some excuse for her absence, came to join us at the gate. The coach that was waiting for us a few doors off drove up towards us, and we were out of the street in an instant.

Although I must confess that this proceeding appeared to me little short of actual robbery, it was not the most dishonest one with which I thought I had

to reproach myself. I had more scruples about the money which I had won at play. However, we derived as little advantage from the one as from the other ; and Heaven sometimes ordains that the lightest fault shall meet the severest punishment.

M. G—— M—— was not long in finding out that he had been duped. I am not sure whether he took any steps that night to discover us, but he had influence enough to ensure an effectual pursuit, and we were sufficiently imprudent to rely upon the extent of Paris, and the distance between our residence and his. Not only did he discover our abode and our circumstances, but also who I was—the life I had led in Paris—Manon's connection with B——, the manner in which she had deceived him : in a word, all the scandalous facts of our history. He therefore resolved to have us apprehended, and treated less as criminals than as vagabonds. An officer came abruptly one morning into our bedroom, with half a dozen archers of the guard. They first took possession of our money, or I should rather say, of G—— M——'s. They made us quickly get up, and conducted us to the door, where we found two coaches, into one of which they forced poor Manon, without any explanation, and I was taken in the other to St. Lazare.

One must have experienced this kind of reverse, to understand the despair that is caused by it. The police were savage enough to deny me the consolation of embracing Manon, or of bidding her farewell. I re-

mained for a long time ignorant of her fate. It was, perhaps, fortunate for me that I was kept in a state of ignorance, for had I known what she suffered, I should have lost my senses, probably my life.

My unhappy mistress was dragged then from my presence, and taken to a place the very name of which fills me with horror to remember. This to be the lot of a creature the most perfect, who must have shared the most splendid throne on earth, if other men had only seen and felt as I did! She was not treated harshly there, but was shut up in a narrow prison, and obliged, in solitary confinement, to perform a certain quantity of work each day, as a necessary condition for obtaining the most unpalatable food. I did not learn this till a long time after, when I had myself endured some months of rough and cruel treatment.

My guards not having told me where it was that they had been ordered to conduct me, it was only on my arrival at St Lazare that I learned my destination. I would have preferred death, at that moment, to the state into which I believed myself about to be thrown. I had the utmost terror of this place. My misery was increased by the guards, on my entrance, examining once more my pockets, to ascertain whether I had about me any arms or weapons of defence.

The Superior appeared. He had been informed of my apprehension. He saluted me with great mildness. "Do not, Father," said I to him "Allow

me to be treated with indignity. I would suffer a thousand deaths rather than quietly submit to degrading treatment." "No, no," he replied, "You will act quietly and prudently, and we shall be mutually content with each other." He begged of me to ascend to one of the highest rooms ; I followed him without a murmur. The archers accompanied us to the door, and the Superior, entering the room, made a sign for them to depart.

"I am your prisoner, I suppose?" said I; "Well, what do you intend to do with me?" He said, he was delighted to see me adopt so reasonable a tone; that it would be his duty to endeavour to inspire me with a taste for virtue and religion, and mine to profit by his exhortations and advice; that lightly as I might be disposed to rate his attentions to me, I should find nothing but enjoyment in my solitude. "Ah, enjoyment, indeed!" replied I; "You do not know, Father; the only thing on earth that could afford me enjoyment." "I know it," said he, "But I trust your inclinations will change." His answer showed that he had heard of my adventures, and perhaps of my name. I begged to know if such were the fact. He told me candidly that they had informed him of every particular.

The blow was the severest of any I had yet experienced. I literally shed a torrent of tears, in all the bitterness of unmixed despair; I could not reconcile myself to the humiliation which would make me a

Manon is ashamed really for the first time
to discover the Superior knows all about him.
He thinks that because he is of different nation
than most men, he suffers more from ridicule.
even he has a slight capacity, he is naturally inclined
to appear anything but attractive from it. He is
ful that others will discover this higher
MANON LESCAUT. 27

by-word of all my acquaintances, and the disgrace of
my family. I passed a week in the most profound
dejection, without being capable of gaining any infor-
mation, or of occupying myself with anything but my
own degradation. The remembrance even of Manon
added nothing to my grief; It only occurred to me as
a circumstance that had preceded my new sorrow;
and the sense of shame and confusion was at present
my all-absorbing passion.

There are few persons who have experienced the
force of these special workings of the mind. The
generality of men are only sensible of five or six
passions in the limited round of which they pass their
lives, and within which all their agitations are con-
fined. Remove them from the influence of love and
hate, pleasure and pain, hope and fear, and they have
no further feeling. But persons of a finer cast can be
affected in a thousand different ways; it would almost
seem that they had more than five senses, and that
they are accessible to ideas and sensations which far
exceed the ordinary faculties of human nature; and,
conscious that they possess a capacity which raises
them above the common herd, there is nothing of
which they are more jealous. Hence springs their
impatience under contempt and ridicule; and hence
it is that a sense of debasement is perhaps the most
violent of all their emotions.

I had this melancholy advantage at St Lazare. My
grief appeared to the Superior so excessive, that, dread-

ing the consequences, he thought he was bound to treat me with more mildness and indulgence. He visited me two or three times a day ; he often made me take a turn with him in the garden, and showed his interest for me in his exhortations and good advice. I listened always attentively ; and warmly expressed my sense of his kindness, from which he derived hope of ultimate conversion.

"You appear to me," said he one day, "of a disposition so mild and tractable, that I cannot comprehend the excesses into which you have fallen. Two things astonish me : one is, how, with your good qualities, you could have ever abandoned yourself to vice ; and the other, which amazes me still more, is, how you can receive with such perfect temper my advice and instructions, after having lived so long in a course of debauchery. If it be sincere repentance, you present a singular example of the benign mercy of Heaven ; if it proceed from the natural goodness of your disposition then you certainly have that within you which warrants the hope that a protracted residence in this place will not be required to bring you back to a regular and respectable life.

I was delighted to find that he had such an opinion of me. I resolved to strengthen it by a continuance of good conduct, convinced that it was the surest means of abridging the term of my confinement. I begged of him to furnish me with books. He was agreeably surprised to find that when he requested me

to say what I should prefer, I mentioned only some religious and instructive works. I pretended to devote myself assiduously to study, and I thus gave him convincing proof of the moral reformation he was so anxious to bring about.

It was nothing, however, but rank hypocrisy—I blush to confess it. Instead of studying, when alone I did nothing but curse my destiny. I lavished the bitterest execrations on my prison, and the tyrants who detained me there. If I ceased for a moment from these lamentations, it was only to relapse into the tormenting remembrance of my love. Manon's absence,—the mystery in which her fate was veiled,—the dread of never again beholding her; these formed the subject of my melancholy thoughts. I fancied her in the arms of G—— M——. Far from imagining that he could have been brute enough to subject her to the same treatment to which I was condemned, I felt persuaded that he had only procured my removal in order that he might possess her undisturbed.

Oh! how miserable were the days and nights I thus passed! They seemed to be of endless duration. My only hope of escape, now, was in hypocrisy; I scrutinised the countenance, and carefully marked every observation that fell from the Superior, in order to ascertain what he really thought of me; and looking on him as the sole arbiter of my future fate, I made it my study to win, if possible, his favour. I

soon had the satisfaction to find that I was firmly established in his good graces, and no longer doubted his disposition to befriend me.

I one day ventured to ask him whether my liberation depended on him. He replied that it was not altogether in his hands, but that he had no doubt that on his representation M. de G—— M——, at whose instance the lieutenant-general of police had ordered me to be confined, would consent to my being set at liberty. "May I flatter myself," rejoined I, in the mildest tone, "that he will consider two months, which I have now spent in this prison, as a sufficient atonement?" He offered to speak to him if I wished, it. I implored him without delay to do me that favour.

He told me two days afterwards that G—— M—— was so sensibly affected by what he had heard that he not only was ready to consent to my liberation, but that he had even expressed a strong desire to become better acquainted with me, and that he himself purposed to pay me a visit in prison. Although his presence could not afford me much pleasure, I looked upon it as a certain prelude to my liberation.

He accordingly came to St. Lazare. I met him with an air more grave and certainly less silly than I had exhibited at his house with Manon. He spoke reasonably enough of my former bad conduct. He added, as if to excuse his own delinquencies, that it was graciously permitted to the weakness of man to

indulge in certain pleasures, but that dishonesty and such like shameful practices ought to be, and always would be, inexorably punished.

I listened to all he said with an air of submission, which quite charmed him. I betrayed no symptoms of annoyance even at some jokes in which he indulged about my relationship with Manon and Lescaut, and about the little chapels of which he supposed I must have had time to erect a great many in St. Lazare, as I was so fond of that occupation. But he happened, unluckily both for me and for himself, to add, that he hoped Manon had also employed herself in the same edifying manner at the Magdalen Hospital. Notwithstanding the thrill of horror I felt at the sound of the name, I had still presence of mind enough to beg, in the gentlest manner, that he would explain himself. "Oh yes!" he replied, "she has been these last two months at the Magdalen Hospital learning to be prudent, and I trust she has improved herself as much there, as you have done at St. Lazare!"

If an eternal imprisonment, or death itself, had been presented to my view, I could not have restrained the excitement into which this afflicting announcement threw me. I flung myself upon him in so violent a rage that half my strength was exhausted by the effort. I had, however, more than enough left to drag him to the ground and grasp him by the throat. I should infallibly have strangled him, if his fall, and the half-stifled cries which he had still the power to utter,

had not attracted the Superior and several of the monks to my room. They rescued him from my fury.

I was, myself, breathless and almost impotent from rage. "O God!" I cried—"Heavenly justice! Must I survive this infamy?" I tried again to seize the barbarian who had thus roused my indignation—they prevented me. My despair,—my cries,—my tears, exceeded all belief: I raved in so incoherent a manner that all the bystanders, who were ignorant of the cause, looked at each other with as much dread as surprise.

G—— M—— in the meantime adjusted his wig and cravat, and in his anger at having been so ill-treated, ordered me to be kept under more severe restraint than before, and to be punished in the manner usual with offenders in St. Lazare. "No, Sir!" said the Superior, "it is not with a person of his birth that we are in the habit of using such means of coercion; besides, he is habitually so mild and well-conducted, that I cannot but think you must have given provocation for such excessive violence." This reply disconcerted G—— M—— beyond measure, and he went away, declaring that he knew how to be revenged on the Superior, as well as on me, and every one else who dared to thwart him. 3 5. v. 51

The Superior, having ordered some of the brotherhood to escort him out of the prison, remained along with me. He conjured me to tell him at once what was the cause of the fracas.—"Oh, father!"

said I to him, continuing to cry like a child, "Imagine the most horrible cruelty, picture to yourself the most inhuman of atrocities—that is what G—— M—— has had the cowardly baseness to perpetrate : he has pierced my heart . Never shall I recover from this blow ! I would gladly tell you the whole circumstances," added I, sobbing with grief ; "You are kind-hearted, and cannot fail to pity me."

I gave him, as briefly as I could, a history of my long-standing and insurmountable passion for Manon, of the flourishing condition of our fortunes previous to the robbery committed by our servants, of the offers which G—— M—— had made to my mistress, of the understanding they had come to, and the manner in which it had been defeated. To be sure, I represented things to him in as favourable a light for us as possible. "Now you can comprehend," continued I, "The source of G—— M——'s holy zeal for my conversion. He has had influence enough to have me shut up here out of mere revenge. That I can pardon ; but father, that is not all. He has taken from me my heart's blood : he has had Manon shamefully incarcerated in the Magdalen ; and had the effrontery to announce it to me this day with his own lips. In the Magdalen, father ! O heavens, my adorable mistress, my beloved Manon, a degraded inmate of the Hospital ! How shall I command strength of mind enough to survive this grief and shame.

The good father seeing me in such affliction, endeavoured to console me. He told me that he had never understood my history, as I just now related it; he had of course known that I led a dissolute life, but he had imagined that M. G—— M——'s interest in me was the result of his esteem and friendship for my family; that it was in this sense he had explained the matter to him; that what I had now told him would assuredly produce a change in my treatment, and that he had no doubt that the accurate detail, which he would immediately transmit to the lieutenant-general of police, would bring about my liberation.

He then inquired why I had never thought of informing my family of what had taken place, since they had never had anything to do with my incarceration. I satisfactorily answered this by stating my unwillingness to cause my father pain, or to bring upon myself the humiliation of such an exposure. In the end he promised to go at once to the lieutenant-general of police; "if it were only," said he, "to be beforehand with M. G—— M——, who went off in such a rage, and who has sufficient influence to make himself formidable."

I looked for the good father's return with all the suspense of a man expecting sentence of death. It was torture to me to think of Manon at the Magdalen. Besides the infamy of such a prison, I knew not how she might be treated there; and the recollec-

tion of some particulars I had formerly heard of this horrible place incessantly renewed my misery. Cost what it might, I was so bent upon relieving her by some means or other, that I should assuredly have set fire to St. Lazare if no other mode of escape had presented itself.

I considered what chances would remain to me if the lieutenant-general still kept me in confinement. I taxed my ingenuity: I scanned every imaginable gleam of hope—I could discover nothing that gave me any prospect of escape, and I feared that I should experience only more rigid confinement if I made an unsuccessful attempt. I thought of some friends from whom I might hope for aid, but then, how was I to make them aware of my situation? At length I fancied that I had hit upon a plan so ingenious, as to offer a fair probability of success. I postponed the details of its arrangement until after the Superior's return, in case of his having failed in the object of his visit.

He soon arrived: I did not observe upon his countenance any of those marks of joy that indicate good news. "I have spoken," said he, "to the lieutenant-general of police, but I was too late. M. G—— M—— went straight to him after quitting us, and so prejudiced him against you that he was on the point of sending me fresh instructions to subject you to closer confinement.

However, when I let him know the truth of your

story, he reconsidered the matter, and, smiling at the conduct of old G—— M——, he said it would be necessary to keep you here for six months longer in order to pacify him ; the less to be lamented, he added, because your morals would be sure to benefit by your residence here. He desired that I should show you every kindness and attention, and I need not assure you that you shall have no reason to complain of your treatment."

This speech of the Superior's was long enough to afford me time to form a prudent resolution. I saw that by betraying too strong an impatience for my liberty, I should probably be upsetting all my projects. I acknowledged to him, that, as it was necessary for me to remain, it was an infinite comfort to know that I possessed a place in his esteem. I then requested him in a quiet way to grant me a favour, which could be of no consequence to others, and which would contribute much to my peace of mind ; it was to inform a friend of mine, a devout clergyman, who lived at St. Sulpice, that I was at St. Lazare, and to permit me occasionally to receive his visits. This was at once granted.

It was, of course, my friend Tiberge ; not that I could hope from him the assistance necessary for affecting my liberty ; but I wished to make him the unconscious instrument of my designs. In a word, this was my project : I wished to write to Lescaut, and to charge him and our common friends with the

task of my deliverance. The first difficulty was to have my letter conveyed to him : this should be Tiberge's office. However, as he knew him to be Manon's brother, I doubted whether he would take charge of this commission. My plan was to enclose my letter to Lescaut in another to some respectable man of my acquaintance, begging him to transmit the first to its address without delay ; and as it was necessary that I should have personal communication with Lescaut, in order to arrange our proceedings, I told him to call on me at St. Lazare, and assume the name of my eldest brother, as if he had come to Paris expressly to see me. I postponed till our meeting the mention of the means I intended to employ. The Superior informed Tiberge of my wish to see him. The ever-faithful friend had not so entirely lost sight of me as to be ignorant of my present abode, and it is probable that, in his heart, he did not regret the circumstance, from an idea that it might furnish the means of my moral regeneration. He lost no time in paying me the desired visit.

[My interview with Tiberge was of the most friendly description. I saw that his object was to discover the present temper of my mind. I opened my heart to him without any reserve, except as to the mere point of my intention of escaping. "It is not from such a friend as you," said I, "that I can ever wish to dissemble my real feelings. If you flattered yourself with a hope that you were at last about to find me

grown prudent and regular in my conduct, a libertine reclaimed by the chastisements of fortune, released alike from the trammels of love, and the dominion that Manon weilds over me, I must in candour say that you deceived yourself. You still behold me, as you left me four months ago, the slave,—if you will the unhappy slave,—of a passion from which I now hope, as fervently and as confidently as I ever did, to derive eventually solid comfort."

He answered that such an acknowledgment rendered me utterly inexcusable; that it was no uncommon thing to meet sinners who allowed themselves to be so dazzled with the glare of vice as to prefer it openly to the true splendour of virtue; they were at least deluded by the false image of happiness, the poor dupes of an empty shadow; but to know and feel as I did, that the object of my attachment was only calculated to render me culpable and unhappy, and to continue thus voluntarily in a career of misery and crime, involved a contradiction of ideas and of conduct little creditable to my reason.

"Tiberge," replied I, "it is easy to triumph when your arguments are unopposed. Allow me to reason for a few moments in my turn. Can you pretend that what you call the happiness of virtue is exempt from troubles, and crosses, and cares? By what name will you designate the dungeon, the rack, the inflictions and tortures of tyrants? Will you say with the Mystics that the soul derives pleasure from the tor-

*Des sinner
claim that
to be virtuous
because sinners
may be excused
if they sin
make them happy*

*Des sinner
conscience all
the misery brought
on him by his
passion. Still is
long to his sin*

Des L'heure
compare the
suffering with
and go through
in their
suffering to
attain
virtue like
the suffering
to go through
with Manon
one can derive
pleasure from
these sufferings
hoping to
attain a happy
end.

ments of the body? You are not bold enough to hold such a doctrine—a paradox not to be maintained. This happiness, then, that you prize so much, has a thousand drawbacks, or is, more properly speaking, but a tissue of sufferings through which one hopes to attain felicity. If by the power of imagination one can even derive pleasure from these sufferings, hoping that they may lead to a happy end, why, let me ask, do you deem my conduct senseless, when it is directed by precisely the same principle? I love Manon: I wade through sorrow and suffering in order to attain happiness with her. My path is one indeed of difficulties, but the mere hope of reaching the desired goal makes it easy and delightful; and I shall think myself but too bountifully repaid by one moment of her society, for all the troubles I encounter in my course. There appears, therefore, no difference between us, or, if there be any, it is assuredly in my favour; for the bliss I hope for is near and tangible, yours is far distant. Mine is of the same kind as my sufferings, that is to say, evident to my senses; yours is of an incomprehensible nature, and only discernible through the dim medium of Faith.

Tiberge appeared shocked by my remarks. He retired two or three paces from me, while he said, in the most serious tone, that my argument was not only a violation of good sense, but that it was the miserable sophistry of irreligion; for the comparison, he added, of the reward of your sufferings with that held out to

Manon is better than virtue for she is near
only in the after-life.

That she can be

us by the divine revelation, is the essence of impiety and absurdity combined.

"I acknowledge," said I, "that the comparison is not a just one, but my argument does not at all depend upon it. I was about to explain that what you consider a contradiction is not one, and, it seems to me, that I have proved that you are much in the same position as I am. It is thus only that our positions are similiar : and I still maintain it.

"You may probably answer that the proposed end of virtue, is infinitely superior to that of love. No one disputes it, but that is not the question—we are only discussing the relative aid they both afford in the endurance of affliction. Judge of that by the practical effect : are there not multitudes who abandon virtue ? how few give up love ?

"Again, you will reply that if there be difficulties in the exercise of virtue, they are by no means universal and sure ; that tyrants and tortures no longer exist, and that many virtuous people go through life calmly and peacefully. I can say with equal truth, that love is often accompanied by content and happiness ; and what makes another distinction of infinite advantage to my argument, I may add that love, though it often deludes, never holds out other than hopes of bliss and joy, whilst religion exacts from her votaries mortification and sorrow."

"Do not be alarmed," said I, perceiving that I had almost offended his zealous feelings of devotion. "I

new thing
it is a
of time
to away
by the
of good
re from
than
2

only wish to say, that there is no more unsuccessful method of weaning man's heart from love, than by endeavouring to decry its enjoyments, and by promising him more pleasure from the exercise of virtue. I is an inherent principle in our nature, that our felicity consists only in pleasure. I defy you to conceive any other notion of it ; and it requires little time to arrive at the conviction, that, of all pleasures, those of love are the sweetest. A man quickly discerns the delusion, when he hears the promise made of livelier enjoyment, and the effect of such misrepresentation is only to make him doubt the truth of a more solid promise.

"Let the preacher who seeks the reformation of a sinner tell me that virtue is indispensably necessary, but not disguise its difficulty and its attendant denials. Say that the enjoyments of love are fleeting, if you will, that they are rigidly forbidden, that they lead with certainty to eternal suffering ; and what would assuredly make a deeper impression upon me than any other argument, say that the more sweet and delectable they are, the brighter will be the reward of Heaven for giving them up in sacrifice ; but confess that, constituted as the heart of man is, they form here, on earth, our most perfect happiness."

My last sentence restored to Tiberge his good-humour. He allowed that my ideas were not altogether so unreasonable. The only point he made, was in asking me why I did not carry my own

principle into operation, sacrificing my passion to the hope of that remuneration of which I had drawn so brilliant a picture. "Oh! my dear friend," replied I; this makes me conscious of my own misery and weakness: true, alas! it is indeed my duty to act according to my argument: but have I the power of governing my own actions? What aid will enable me to forget Manon's charms?" "God forgive me," said Tiberge, "I can almost fancy you a Jansenist." "I know not of what sect I am," replied I, "nor do I indeed very clearly see to which I ought to belong; but I cannot deny the truth of the Jansenists' tenets." ⁶¹ S. 8.

One effect of our conversation was to revive my friend's pity for me in all its force. He perceived that there was in my errors more of weakness than of vice; and he was the more disposed in the end to give me assistance; without which I should infallibly have perished from distress of mind. However, I carefully concealed from him my intention of escaping from St. Lazare. I merely begged of him to take charge of my letter; I had it ready before he came, and reasons for writing were not wanting. He faithfully transmitted it, and Lescaut received before evening the one I had enclosed for him.

He came to see me next morning, and fortunately was admitted under my brother's name. I was overjoyed at seeing him in my room. I carefully closed the door. "Let us lose no time," I said. "First tell me about Manon, and then advise me how I am to shake

off these fetters." He assured me that he had not seen his sister since the day before my arrest, and that it was only by repeated inquiries, and after much trouble that he had at length been able to discover her fate as well as mine ; and that he had two or three times presented himself at the Magdalen Hospital, and been refused admittance. "Wretch !" muttered I to myself, "dearly shall G—— M—— pay for this !"

"As to your escape," continued Lescaut, "it will not be so easy as you imagine. Last evening, I and a couple of friends walked round this establishment to reconnoitre it ; and we agreed that, as your windows looked into a court surrounded by buildings, as you yourself mentioned in your letter, there would be vast difficulty in getting you out. Besides, you are on the third story, and it would be impossible to introduce ropes or ladders. I therefore see no means from without—in the house itself we must hit upon some scheme.

"No," replied I ; "I have examined everything minutely, particularly since, through the governor's indulgence, my confinement has been less rigorous, I am no longer locked into my room ; I have liberty to walk in the gallery ; but there is, upon every landing, a strong door kept closed night and day ; so that it is impossible for ingenuity alone to rescue me."

"Wait," said I, after turning in my mind for a moment an idea that struck me as excellent ; "could you bring me a pistol ?" "Softly," said Lescaut to me, "you don't think of committing murder ?" I assured

him that I had so little intention of shooting any one, that it would not be even necessary to have the pistol loaded. "Bring it to me to-morrow," I added, and do not fail to be exactly opposite the great entrance with two or three of your friends at eleven to-morrow night; I think I shall be able to join you there." He in vain requested me to explain my plan. I told him that such an attempt as I contemplated, could only appear rational after it had succeeded. I begged of him to shorten his visit, so that he might as readily be admitted on the morrow. The next day he was at once introduced to my room. So respectable was his appearance, that any one would have taken him for an honorable man.

When I found in my hand the instrument of my liberty, I no longer doubted my success. It was certainly a strange and a bold project; but of what was I not capable, with the motives that inspired me? I had, since I was allowed permission to walk in the galleries, found opportunities of observing that every night the porter brought the keys of all the doors to the Superior, and subsequently there always reigned a profound silence in the house, which shewed that the inmates had retired to rest. There was an open communication between my room and that of the Superior. My resolution was, if he refused quietly to surrender the keys, to force him, by threatening to shoot him, to deliver them up, and then by their help to gain the street. I impatiently awaited the moment

for executing my purpose. The porter arrived at his usual time, that is to say, soon after nine o'clock. I allowed an hour to elapse, in order that the monks as well as the servants might be all asleep. I at length proceeded with my pistol and a lighted candle. I first give a gentle tap at the Superior's door to awaken without alarming him. I knocked a second time before he heard me; and supposing of course that it was one of the monks who was taken ill and wanted assistance, he got out of bed, and came to the door. He had, however, the precaution to ask first who it was, and what was wanted? I was obliged to mention my name, but I assumed a plaintive tone, to make him believe that I was indisposed. "Ah! it is you, my dear boy," said he, on opening the door; "what can bring you here at this hour?" I stepped inside the door, and leading him to the opposite side of the room, I declared to him that it was absolutely impossible for me to remain longer at St. Lazare; that the night was the most favourable time for going unobserved, and that I confidently expected, from his tried friendship, that he would consent to open the gates for me, or entrust me with the keys to let myself out.

This compliment to his friendship seemed to surprise him. He stood for a few moments looking at me without making any reply. Finding that I had no time to lose I just begged to assure him that I had the most lively sense of all his kindness, but that

freedom was dearer to man than every other consideration, especially so to me, who had been cruelly and unjustly deprived of it; that I was resolved this night to recover it, cost what it would, and fearing lest he might raise his voice and call for assistance, I let him see the powerful incentive to silence, which I had kept concealed in my bosom. "A pistol!" cried he. "What! my son! will you take away my life in return for the attentions I have shewn you?" "God forbid," replied I; "you are too reasonable to drive me to that horrible extremity; but I am determined to be free, and so firmly determined, that if you defeat my project, I will put an end to your existence." "But, my dear son," said he, pale and frightened, "what have I done to you? What reason have you for taking my life?" "No!" replied I, impatiently, "I have no design upon your life: if you, yourself, wish to live, open the doors for me, and you will find me the most attached of friends." I perceived the keys upon the table: I took them, and begged him to follow me with as little noise as possible.

He saw the necessity of consenting. We proceeded, and as he opened each door, he repeated, with a sigh: "Ah! my son, who could have believed it?"—"No noise, good father, no noise," I as often answered in my turn. At length we reached a kind of barrier, just inside the great entrance. I already fancied myself free, and kept close behind the superior, with my candle in the one hand, and my pistol in the other.

my sole object in desiring my own liberty. I rely on your aiding me with all your ingenuity ; as for myself, my life shall be devoted to the purpose."

Lescaut, who was not deficient in tact, and still less in discretion, dwelt upon the necessity of acting with extreme caution : he said that my escape from St. Lazare, and the accident that happened on my leaving it, would assuredly create a sensation ; that the lieutenant-general of police would cause a strict search to be made for me, and it would be difficult to evade him ; in fine, that, unless disposed to encounter something worse, perhaps, than St. Lazare, it would be requisite for me to remain concealed for a few days, in order to give the enemy's zeal time to cool. No doubt this was wise counsel ; but, one should have been wise oneself to have followed it. Such calculating slowness little suited my passion. The utmost I could bring myself to promise, was that I would sleep through the whole of the next day. He locked me in my bedroom, where I remained patiently until night.

I employed great part of the time in devising schemes for relieving Manon. I felt persuaded that her prison was even more inaccessible than mine had been. Force was out of the question. Artifice was the only resource ; but the goddess of invention herself could not have told me how to begin. I felt the impossibility of working in the dark, and therefore postponed the further consideration of my schemes until I could acquire some knowledge of the internal

arrangements of the hospital, in which she was confined.

As soon as night restored to me my liberty, I begged of Lescaut to accompany me. We were not long in drawing one of the porters into conversation : he appeared a reasonable man. I passed for a stranger who had often with admiration heard of the hospital, and of the order that reigned within it. I inquired into the most minute details ; and proceeding from one subject to another, we at length spoke of the managers, and of these I begged to know the names and the respective characters. He gave me such information upon the last point as, at once, suggested an idea which flattered my hopes, and which I immediately set about carrying into execution. I asked him (this being a matter essential to my plan), whether any of the gentlemen had children. He said he could not answer me with certainty as to all, but as for M. de T——, one of the principal directors, he knew that he had a son old enough to be married, and who had come several times to the hospital with his father. This was enough for my purpose.

I immediately put an end to our interview, and, in returning, I told Lescaut of the plan I had formed. "I have taken it," said I, "into my head, that M. de T——, the son, who is rich and of good family, must have the same taste for pleasure that other young men of his age generally have. He could hardly be so bad a friend to the fair sex, nor so absurd, as to refuse his

services in an affair of Love. I have arranged a plan for interesting him in favour of Manon. If he is a man of feeling and of right mind, he will give us his assistance from generosity. If he is not to be touched by a motive of this kind, he will at least do something for a handsome girl, if it were only with the hope of hereafter sharing her favours. I will not defer seeing him," added I, "beyond to-morrow. I really feel so elated by this project, that I look upon it with every hope of success."

Lescaut himself allowed that the idea was not unreasonable, and that we might fairly entertain a hope of turning it to account. I passed the night less sadly.

Next morning I dressed as well as, in my present state of indigence, I could possibly contrive to do; and went in a hackney coach to the residence of M. de T——. He was surprised at receiving a visit from a perfect stranger. I augured favourably from his countenance and the civility of his manner. I explained my object in the most candid way; and, to excite his feelings as much as possible, I spoke of my ardent passion and of Manon's merit, as of two things that were unequalled, except by each other. He told me that although he had never seen Manon, he had heard of her; at least, if the person I was talking of was the same who had been the mistress of old G—— M——. I conjectured that he must have heard of the part I had acted in that transaction, and in order

to conciliate him more and more by treating him with confidence, I told him everything that had occurred to Manon and myself. "You see, sir," said I, "that all that can interest me in life, all that can command my affections, is in your hands. I have no reserve with you, because I have been informed of your generous and noble character ; and, being of the same age, I trust I shall find some resemblance in our dispositions."

He seemed flattered by this mark of candour and confidence. He replied in a manner that became a man of the world, and a man of feeling also, for they are not always synonymous terms. He told me that he appreciated my visit as a piece of good fortune ; that he considered my friendship as a valuable acquisition, and that he would endeavour to prove himself worthy of it, by the sincerity of his services. He could not absolutely promise to restore Manon to my arms, because, as he said, he himself had very little influence ; but he offered to procure me the pleasure of seeing her, and to do everything in his power to effect her release. I was more satisfied with this frank avowal as to his want of influence, than I should have been by an unqualified promise of fulfilling all my wishes. I found in his moderation a pledge of his sincerity : in a word, I no longer doubted my entire success. The promise alone of enabling me to see Manon filled me with gratitude, and I testified it in so earnest a manner, as to give him a favourable opinion of my heart and disposition ; we shook hands

warmly, and parted sworn friends, merely from mutual regard, and the natural feeling which prompts a man of kind and generous sentiments to esteem another of congenial mind.

He indeed exceeded me in the proofs of his esteem ; for, inferring from my adventures, and especially my late escape from St. Lazare, that I might be in want of money, he offered me his purse, and pressed me to accept it. I refused, but said to him, "You are too kind, my dear Sir ! If in addition to such proofs of kindness and friendship, you enable me to see Manon again, rely on my eternal regard and gratitude. If you succeed in restoring altogether this dear creature to my arms, I should think myself happy in spilling the last drop of my blood in your service."

Before we parted we agreed as to the time and place for our meeting. He was so considerate as to appoint the afternoon of the same day.

I waited for him at a café, where he joined me about four o'clock, and we went together towards the Magdalen Hospital ; my knees trembled under me as I crossed the courts. "Powers of Love !" said I, "then I shall once more behold the idol of my heart—the dear object of my many sighs and lamentations ! All I now ask of Providence 'is, to vouchsafe me strength enough to reach her presence, and after that, to dispose as it pleaseth of my future fate, and of my life itself. Beyond this, I have no prayer to utter."

M. de T——spoke to some of the porters of the

establishment, who appeared all anxious to please him. The quarter in which Manon's room lay was pointed out to us, and our guide carried in his hand the key of her chamber : it was of frightful size. I asked the man who conducted us, and whose duty it was to attend to Manon, how she passed her time ? He said, that she had a temper of the most angelic sweetness ; that even he, disagreeable as his official duties must render him, had never heard from her a single syllable in the nature of rebuke or harshness ; that her tears had never ceased to flow during the first six weeks after her arrival, but that latterly she seemed to bear her misfortunes with more resignation, and that she employed herself from morning till night with her needle, excepting some hours that she, each day, devoted to reading. I asked whether she had been decently provided for. He assured me that at least she had never felt the want of necessaries.

We now approached her door. My heart beat almost audibly in my bosom. I said to M. de T——, " Go in alone, and prepare her for my visit ; I fear that she may be overcome by seeing me unexpectedly." The door was opened. I remained in the passage and listened to the conversation. He said that he came to bring her consolation ; that he was a friend of mine, and felt deeply interested for the happiness of us both. She asked with the tenderest anxiety, whether he could tell her what had become of me. He promised that she should soon see

me at her feet, as affectionate and as faithful as ever. "When?" she asked. "This very day," said he; "the happy moment shall not be long delayed; nay, this very instant even if you wish it." She at once understood that I was at the door; as she was rushing towards it, I entered. We embraced each other with that abounding and impassioned tenderness which an absence of three months makes so delicious to those who truly love. Our sighs, our broken exclamations, the thousand endearing appellations of love, exchanged in languishing rapture, affected M. de T—— to tears.

"I cannot help envying you," said he, as he begged us to be seated; "there is no lot, however glorious, that I would hold as comparable to the possession of a mistress at once so tender and impassioned." "Nor would I," I replied, "give up her love for universal empire."

The remainder of an interview, which had been so long and so ardently desired by me, was of course as tender as the commencement. Poor Manon related all her adventures, and I told her mine: we bitterly wept over each other's story, M. de T—— consoled us by his renewed promises to exert himself in our service. He advised us not to make this, our first interview, of too long duration, that he might have the less difficulty in procuring us the same enjoyment again. He at length induced us to follow his advice. Manon especially could not reconcile herself to the

separation ; she made me a hundred times resume my seat. At one time she held me by my hands, at another by my coat. "Alas !" she said, "in what an abode do you leave me ? Who will answer for my ever seeing you again ?" M. de T—— promised her that he would often come and see her with me. "As to the abode," he said, "it must no longer be called the Magdalen Hospital ; it is Versailles ! now that it contains a person who deserves the empire of all hearts."

I made the man who attended a present as I went out, in order to quicken his zeal and attentions. This fellow had a mind less rough and vulgar than the generality of his class. He had witnessed our interview, and was affected by it. The interest he felt was doubtless increased by the louis d'or I gave him. "Sir," said he, "If you will only take me into your service, or indemnify me in any way for the loss of the situation which I fill here, I think I could not have much difficulty in liberating the beautiful Manon."

I caught readily at the suggestion, and, although at the moment I was almost in a state of destitution, I gave him promises far beyond his desires. I considered that it would be at all times easy to recompense a man of his description. "Be assured, my friend," said I to him, "that there is nothing I will not be ready to do for you, and that your fortune is just as certain as my own." I inquired what means he in-

tended to employ. "None other," said he, "Than merely to open the door of her cell for her at night, and to conduct her to the street door, where you, of course, will be to receive her." I asked whether there was no danger of her being recognised as she traversed the long galleries and the courts. He admitted that there was danger, but that nothing could be done without some slight risk.

Although I was delighted to find him so determined, I called M. de T——, and informed him of the project, and of the only difficulty in the way. He thought it not so easy of execution. He allowed the possibility of escaping thus: "But if she be recognised," continued he, "If she be stopped in the attempt, all hope will be over with her, perhaps for ever. Besides, you would be obliged to quit Paris instantly, for you could never evade the search that would be made for you: they would redouble their efforts as much on your own account as hers. A single man may easily escape detection, but in company with a handsome woman, it would be utterly impossible to remain undiscovered."

However sound this reasoning, it could not, in my mind outweigh the immediate prospect of restoring Manon to liberty. I said as much to M. de T——, and trusted that he would excuse my imprudence and rashness, on the ground of love. I added that it was already my intention to quit Paris for some neighbouring village, as I had once before done. We then

settled with the servant that he should carry his project into execution the following day, and to render our success as certain as he could, we resolved to carry into the prison men's clothes, in order to facilitate her escape. There was a difficulty to be surmounted in carrying them in, but I had ingenuity enough to meet it. I begged of M. de T—— only to put on two light waistcoats the next morning, and I undertook to arrange the rest.

We returned the following day to the hospital. I took with me linen, stockings, &c., for Manon, and over my body-coat a surtout, which concealed the bulk I carried in my pockets. We remained but a moment in her room. M. de T—— left her one of his waistcoats ; I gave her my short coat, the surtout being sufficient for me. She found nothing wanting for her complete equipment but a pair of pantaloons, which, in my hurry, I had forgotten.

The want of so necessary an article might have amused us, if the embarrassment it caused had been of a less serious kind. I was in despair at having our whole scheme foiled by a trifling omission of this nature. However, I soon hit on a remedy, and determined to make my own exit trouserless, leaving that portion of my dress with Manon. My surtout was long, and I contrived, by the help of a few pins, to put myself in a decent condition for passing the gate.

The remainder of the day appeared to me of endless length. When, at last, night came, we went in a

coach to within a few yards of the hospital. We were not long waiting, when we saw Manon make her appearance with her guide. The door of the coach being opened, they both stepped in without delay. I opened my arms to receive my adored mistress; she trembled like an aspen leaf. The coachman asked where he was to drive? "To the end of the world! I exclaimed; to some place where I can never again be separated from Manon."

This burst, which I could not control, was near bringing me into fresh trouble. The coachman reflected upon what I said, and when I afterwards told him the name of the street to which I wished him to drive, he answered that he feared I was about to implicate him in some bad business; that he saw plainly enough that the good-looking young man whom I called Manon, was a girl eloping from the hospital and that he was little disposed indeed to ruin himself for love of me.

Extortion was the source of this scoundrel's delicacy. We were still too near the hospital to make any noise. "Silence!" said I to him, "you shall have a louis d'or for the job:"—for less than that he would have helped me to burn the hospital.

We arrived at Lescaut's house. As it was late, M. de T—left us on the way, promising to visit us the next morning. The servant alone remained.

I held Manon in such close embrace in my arms, that we occupied but one place in the coach. She

cried for joy, and I could feel her tears trickling down my cheeks.

When we were about getting out at Lescaut's, I had a new difficulty with the coachman, which was attended with the most unfortunate results. I repented of having promised the fellow a louis d'or, not only because it was extravagant folly, but for another stronger reason, that it was at the moment out of my power to pay him. I called for Lescaut, and he came down to the door. I whispered to him the cause of my present embarrassment. Being naturally rough, and not at all in the habit of treating hackney coachmen with respect, he answered that I could not be serious. "A louis!" said he; "twenty blows of a cane would be the right payment for that rascal!" I entreated him not to destroy us; when he snatched my cane from my hand, and was about to lay it on the coachman. The fellow had probably before experienced the weight of a guardsman's arm, and instantly drove off, crying out, that I had cheated him, and should hear of him again. I in vain endeavoured to stop him.

His flight caused me, of course, the greatest alarm. I had no doubt that he would immediately give information to the Police. "You have ruined me," said I to Lescaut; "I shall be no longer safe at your house; we must go hence at once." I gave Manon my arm, and as quickly as possible got out of the dangerous neighbourhood. Lescaut accompanied us.

expressed no sort of surprise at seeing Manon in male attire, for it was the custom in Paris and the environs to adopt all disguises. I took care to have her served with as much attention as if I had been in prosperous circumstances. She was ignorant of my poverty, and I carefully kept her so, being resolved to return alone the following day to Paris, to seek some cure for this vexatious kind of malady.

At supper she appeared pale and thin ; I had not observed this at the hospital, as the room in which I saw her was badly lighted. I asked her if the excessive paleness was not caused by the shock of witnessing her brother's death ? She assured me that, horrified as she naturally was at the event, her paleness was purely the effect of a three months' absence from me. " You do love me then devotedly ? " I exclaimed.

" A thousand times more than I can tell ! " was her reply.

" You will never leave me again ? " I added.

" No ! never, never ! " answered she.

This assurance was confirmed by so many caresses and vows, that it appeared impossible she could ever forget them. I have never doubted that she was at that moment sincere. What motive could she have had for dissembling to such a degree ? But she became afterwards still more volatile than ever, or rather she was no longer anything, and entirely forgot herself, when, in poverty and want, she saw other

payment. "Take us to Chaillot," said I to the coachman. He refused to drive us so far at that late hour for less than twelve francs. A new embarrassment ! At last we agreed for half that sum—all that my purse contained.

I tried to console Manon as we went along, but despair was rankling in my own heart. I should have destroyed myself a thousand times over, if I had not felt that I held in my arms all that could attach me to life : this reflection reconciled me. "I possess her at least," said I ; "she loves me ! she is mine ! Vainly does Tiberge call this a mere phantom of happiness. I could, without feeling interest or emotion, see the whole world besides perish around me. Why ? Because I have in it no object of affection beyond her."

This sentiment was true ; however, while I so lightly esteemed the good things of the world, I felt that there was no doing without some little portion of them, were it only to inspire a more thorough contempt for the remainder. Love is more powerful than wealth — more attractive than grandeur or fame ; but it cannot exist without their aid ; and there is nothing more humiliating to the feelings of the sensitive lover, than to find himself, by want of means, reduced to the level of the most vulgar minds.

It was eleven o'clock when we arrived at Chaillot. They received us at the inn as old acquaintances, and

think about them when those of the moment were satisfied.

The main object now was to replenish my purse. M. de T——had once offered me his, but I had an extreme repugnance to mention the subject to him again. What a degradation to expose one's misery to a stranger, and to ask for charity: it must be either a man of low mind who would thus demean himself, and that from a baseness which must render him insensible to the degradation, or a humble Christian from a consciousness of generosity in himself, which must put him above the sense of shame. I was neither a coward, nor a good Christian. I would have sacrificed half my life to be spared the humiliation.

"Tiberge," said I, "kind Tiberge, will he refuse me what he has in his power to grant? No, he will assuredly sympathise in my misery; but he will also torture me with his lectures! One must endure his reproaches, his exhortations, his threats: I shall have to purchase his assistance so dearly, that I would rather make any sacrifice than encounter this distressing scene, which cannot fail to leave me full of sorrow and remorse. Well, thought I again, all hope must be relinquished, since no other course presents itself; so far am I from adopting either of these, that I would sooner shed half my blood than encounter these evils. Yes, the very last drop," I repeated after a moment's reflection, "I would sacrifice willingly rather than submit to such base supplication!"

idea
everything
Manon's
though
id give
life
than
But
value
than
again
than
the
input
the
more

"But it is not in reality a question of my existence !
 Manon's life and maintenance, her love and her
 fidelity, are at stake ! What consideration can out-
 weigh that ? I have never hesitated yet. In her are
 centred all my glory, happiness, and future fortune !
 There are doubtless many things that I would gladly
 give up my life to obtain, or to avoid ; but to value a
 thing beyond my own life, is not putting it on a par
 with Manon." This idea soon decided me :
 I went on my way, resolved to go first to Tiberge,
 and afterwards to M. de T——.

On entering Paris I took a hackney coach, though
 I had not wherewithal to pay for it ; I calculated on
 the loan I was going to solicit. I drove to the
 Luxembourg, whence I sent word to Tiberge that I
 was waiting for him. I had not to stay many
 minutes. I told him without hesitation the extremity
 of my wants. He asked if the hundred pistoles which
 I had returned to him would suffice, and he at once
 went to fetch it with that generous air, that pleasure
 in bestowing which "blesseth him that gives and him
 that takes," and which can only be known to Love or
 to true Friendship.

Although I had never entertained a doubt of
 Tiberge's readiness to grant my request, yet I was
 surprised at having obtained it on such easy terms,
 that is to say, without a word of reprimand for my
 impenitence ; but I was premature in fancying myself
 safe from his reproaches, for when he had counted

out the money, and I was on the point of going away, he begged of me to take a walk with him in the garden. I had not mentioned Manon's name ; he knew nothing of her escape ; so that his lecture was merely upon my own rash flight from St. Lazare, and upon his apprehensions lest, instead of profiting by the lessons of morality which I had received there, I should again relapse into dissipation.

He told me, that having gone to pay me a visit at St. Lazare, the day after my escape, he had been astonished beyond expression at hearing the mode in which I had effected it ; that he had afterwards a conversation with the Superior ; that the good father had not quite recovered the shock ; that he had, however, the generosity to conceal the real circumstances from the lieutenant-general of police, and that he had prevented the death of the porter from becoming known outside the walls ; that I had, therefore, upon that score, no ground for alarm, but that, if I retained one grain of prudence, I should profit by this happy turn which Providence had given to my affairs, and begin by writing to my father, and reconciling myself with him ; and finally that, if I would be guided by his advice, I should at once quit Paris, and return to the bosom of my family.

I listened to him attentively till he had finished. There was much in what he said to gratify me. In the first place, I was delighted to learn that I had nothing to fear on account of St. Lazare—the streets

of Paris at least were again open to me. Then I rejoiced to find that Tiberge had no suspicion of Manon's escape, and her return to my arms. I even remarked that he had not mentioned her name, probably from the idea that, by my seeming indifference to her, she had become less dear to my heart. I resolved, if not to return home, at least to write to my father, as he advised me, and to assure him that I was disposed to return to my duty, and consult his wishes. My intention was to urge him to send me money for the purpose of pursuing my ordinary studies at the University, for I should have found it difficult to persuade him that I had any inclination to resume my ecclesiastical habit. I was in truth not at all averse to what I was now going to promise him. On the contrary, I was ready to apply myself to some creditable and rational pursuit, so far as the occupation would be compatible with my love. I reckoned upon being able to live with my mistress, and at the same time continuing my studies. I saw no inconsistency in this plan.

These thoughts were so satisfactory to my mind, that I promised Tiberge to dispatch a letter by that day's post to my father : in fact, on leaving him, I went into a scrivener's, and wrote in such a submissive and dutiful tone, that, on reading over my own letter, I anticipated the triumph I was going to achieve over my father's heart.

Although I had money enough to pay for a

hackney-coach after my interview with Tiberge, I felt a pleasure in walking independently through the streets to M. de T——'s house. There was great comfort in this unaccustomed exercise of my liberty, as to which my friend had assured me I had nothing now to apprehend. However, it suddenly occurred to me, that he had been only referring to St Lazare, and that I had the other affair of the hospital on my hands and likewise the death of Lescaut ; being implicated, if not as an accomplice, at all events as a witness. This thought alarmed me so much, that I slipped down the first narrow street, and called a coach. I went at once to M. de T——'s, and he laughed at my apprehensions. I myself thought them ridiculous enough, when he informed me that there was no more danger from Lescaut's affray, than from the hospital adventure. He told me that, from the fear of their suspecting that he had a hand in Manon's escape, he had gone that morning to the hospital, and asked to see her, pretending not to know anything of what had happened ; that they were so far from entertaining the least suspicion of either of us, that they lost no time in relating the adventure as a piece of news to him ; and that they wondered how so pretty a girl as Manon Lescaut could have thought of eloping with a servant : that he replied with seeming indifference, that it by no means astonished him, for people would do anything for the sake of liberty.

He then went to Lescaut's apartments, in the hope of finding me there with my dear mistress ; the master of the house, who was a coachmaker, protested he had seen neither me nor Manon ; but that it was no wonder that we had not appeared there, if our object was to see Lescaut, for that we must have doubtless heard of his having been assassinated about the very same time ; upon which, he related all that he knew of the cause and circumstances of the murder.

About two hours previous to the tragedy, a guardsman of Lescaut's acquaintance had come to see him, and proposed play. Lescaut had such a rapid and extravagant run of luck, that in an hour the young man was minus twelve hundred francs,—all the money he had. Finding himself without a sou, he begged of Lescaut to lend him half the sum he had lost : and there being some difficulty on this point, an angry quarrel arose between them. Lescaut had refused to give him the required satisfaction, and the other swore, on quitting him, that he would take his life ; a threat which he carried into execution the same night. M. de T—— was kind enough to add that he had felt the utmost anxiety on our account, and that, such as they were, he should gladly continue to us his services. I at once told him the place of our retreat. He begged of me to allow him to sup with us.

As I had nothing more to do than to procure the linen and clothes for Manon, I told him that we

might start almost immediately, if he would be so good as to accompany me, while I went into one or two shops. I know not whether he suspected that I made this preposition with the view of calling his generosity into place, or whether it was by the mere impulse of a kind heart ; but, having consented to start immediately, he took me to shops where he dealt. He there made me select several articles of a much higher price than I had proposed to myself ; and when I was about to pay the bill, he desired the man not to take a sou from me. This he did so gracefully, that I felt no shame in accepting his present. We then took the road to Chaillot together, where I arrived much more easy in mind than when I left it that morning.

[The Chevalier des Grieux having occupied more than an hour with his story, I begged him to give himself a little rest, and meanwhile to share our supper. He saw, by the attention we paid him, that we were deeply interested, and promised that we should hear something more thrilling in the sequel. When we had finished supper, he continued in the following words :]

My return and the polite attentions of M. de T—— dispelled all Manon's melancholy. "Let us forget our past annoyance, darling," said I to her, "and endeavour to live a still happier life than before. After all, there are worse masters than Love : Fate cannot subject us to as much sorrow as Love enables

they should be measured by the means of affluence of society
wealth. ~~Though the~~ ~~wealth is~~ ~~measured by~~ ~~recession~~
ing. But once he has enough to satisfy Manon's ~~desire~~
happily. MANON LESCAUT
us to taste of happiness." Our supper was a true scene honestly
of joy.

In possession of Manon and of twelve hundred and
fifty francs, I was prouder and more contented than
the richest voluptuary of Paris with untold treasures.
Desire wealth should be measured by the means it affords us
united of satisfying our desires. There did not remain to me
my share at this moment a single wish unaccomplished. Even
of Manon the future gave me little concern. I felt a hope,
in not amounting almost to a certainty, that my father
sted by would allow me the means of living respectably in
He Paris, because I had become entitled, on entering
covet upon my twentieth year, to a share of my mother's
with fortune. I did not conceal from Manon what was
the extent of my present wealth; but I added,
that it might suffice to support us until our
fortune was bettered, either by the inheritance I
have just alluded to, or by the resources of the hazard-
table.

For several weeks I thus continued to think only
of enjoying the full luxury of my situation; and
being restrained by a sense of honour, as well as a
lurking apprehension of the police, from renewing my
intimacy with my former companions at the Hotel of
Transylvania, I began to play in certain coteries less
notorious, where my good luck rendered it unnecessary
for me to have recourse to my former accomplish-
ments. I passed a part of the afternoon in town, and
returned always to supper at Chaillot, accompanied

very often by M. de T——, whose intimacy with us daily increased.

Manon soon found resources against ennui. She became acquainted with some young ladies, whom the spring brought into the neighbourhood. They occupied their leisure hours in walking, and the customary amusements of persons of their sex and age. Their little gains at cards (always within innocent limits) were laid out in defraying the expense of a coach, in which they took an airing occasionally in the Bois de Boulogne; and each night when I returned I was sure of finding Manon more beautiful—more contented—more affectionate than ever.

There arose, however, certain clouds, which seemed to threaten the continuance of this blissful tranquillity, but they were soon dispelled; and Manon's sprightliness made the affair so excessively comical in its termination, that it is even now pleasing to recur to it, as a proof of the tenderness as well as the cheerfulness of her disposition.

The only servant we had came to me one day with great embarrassment, and taking me aside, told me that he had a secret of the utmost importance to communicate to me. I urged him to explain himself without reserve. After some hesitation, he gave me to understand that a foreigner of high rank had apparently fallen in love with Manon. I felt my blood boil at the announcement. "Has she shewn any liking for him?" I inquired, interrupting my infor-

mant with more impatience than was requisite, if I desired to have a full explanation.


He was alarmed at my excitement ; and replied in an undecided tone, that he had not sufficiently observed to satisfy me ; but that, having noticed for several days together the regular arrival of the stranger at the Bois de Boulogne, where, quitting his carriage, he walked by himself in the cross avenues, appearing to seek opportunities of meeting Manon, it had occurred to him to form an acquaintance with the servants, in order to discover the name of their master ; that they spoke of him as an Italian prince, and that they also suspected he was upon some adventure of gallantry. He had not been able to learn anything further, he added, trembling as he spoke, because the Prince, then on the point of leaving the wood, had approached him, and with the most condescending familiarity asked his name ; upon which, as if he at once knew that he was in our service, he congratulated him on having, for his mistress, the most enchanting person on earth.

I listened to this recital with the greatest impatience. He ended with the most awkward excuses, which I attributed to the premature and imprudent display of my own agitation. In vain I implored him to continue his history. He protested that he knew nothing more, and that what he had previously told me, having only happened the preceding day, he had not had a second opportunity of seeing the Prince's servants.

I encouraged him, not only with praises, but with a substantial recompense; and without betraying the slightest distrust of Manon, I requested him, in the mildest manner, to keep strict watch upon all the foreigner's movements.

In truth, the effect of this fright was to leave me in a state of the cruellest suspense. It was possible that she had ordered him to suppress part of the truth. However, after a little reflection, I recovered sufficiently from my fears to regret that I had exposed my weaknesses. I could hardly consider it a crime in Manon to be loved. Judging from appearances, it was probable that she was not even aware of her conquest. And what kind of life shall I in future lead, thought I, if I am capable of letting jealousy so easily take possession of my mind.

I returned on the following day to Paris, with no other intention than to hasten the improvement of my fortune, by playing deeper than ever, in order to be in a condition to quit Chaillot on the first real occasion for uneasiness. That night I learned nothing at all calculated to trouble my repose. The foreigner had, as usual, made his appearance in the Bois de Boulogne; and venturing, from what had passed the preceding day, to accost my servant more familiarly, he spoke to him openly of his passion, but in such terms as not to lead to the slightest suspicion of Manon's being aware of it. He put a thousand questions to him, and at last tried to bribe him with large pro-

mises, and taking a letter from his pocket, he in vain entreated him, with the promise of some louis d'or, to convey it to her. 

Two days passed without anything more occurring : the third was of a different character. I learned on my arrival, later than usual, from Paris, that Manon, while in the wood, had left her companions for a moment, and that the foreigner, who had followed her at a short distance, approached, upon her making him a sign, and that she handed him a letter, which he took with a transport of joy. He had only time to express his delight by kissing the billet-doux, for she was out of sight in an instant. But she appeared in usually high spirits the remainder of the day ; and even after her return to our lodgings, her gaiety continued. I trembled at every word.

"Are you perfectly sure," said I, in an agony of fear, to my servant, "that your eyes have not deceived you?" He called Heaven to witness the truth of what he had told me.

I know not to what excess the torments of my mind would have driven me, if Manon, who heard me come in, had not met me with an air of impatience, and complained of my delay. Before I had time to reply, she loaded me with caresses ; and when she found we were alone, she reproached me warmly with the habit I was contracting of staying out so late. My silence gave her an opportunity of continuing ; and she then said that for the last three weeks I

had never spent one entire day in her society ; that she could not endure such prolonged absence ; that she should at least expect me to give up a day to her from time to time, and that she particularly wished me to be with her on the following day from morning till night.

" You may be very certain I shall do that," said I in rather a sharp tone. She did not appear to notice my annoyance ; she seemed to me to have more than her usual cheerfulness ; and she described, with infinite pleasantry, the manner in which she had spent the day.

" Incomprehensible girl !" said I to myself ; " What am I to expect from such a prelude ? " The adventure of our first separation occurred to me ; nevertheless I fancied I saw in her cheerfulness, and the affectionate reception she gave me, an air of truth that perfectly accorded with her professions.

It was an easy matter at supper to account for the low spirits which I could not conceal, by attributing them to a loss I had that day sustained at the gaming-table. I considered it most fortunate that the idea of my remaining all the next day at Chaillot was suggested by herself : I should thus have ample time for deliberation. My presence would prevent any fears for at least the next day ; and if nothing should occur to compel me to disclose the discovery I had already made, I was determined on the following day to move my establishment into town, and fix myself

in a quarter where I should have nothing to apprehend from the interferences of princes. This arrangement made me pass the night more tranquilly, but it by no means put an end to the grief I felt at the prospect of a new infidelity.

When I awoke in the morning, Manon said to me, that although we were to pass the day at home, she did not at all wish that I should be less carefully dressed than on other occasions; and that she had a particular fancy for doing the duties of my toilette that morning with her own hands. It was an amusement she often indulged in; but she appeared to take more pains on this occasion than I ever observed before. To gratify her, I was obliged to sit at her toilette table, and try all the different modes she imagined for dressing my hair. In the course of the operation, she made me often turn my head round towards her, and putting both hands upon my shoulders, she would examine me with most anxious curiosity: then, shewing her approbation by one or two kisses, she would make me resume my former position before the glass, in order to continue her occupation.

This amatory trifling engaged us till dinner-time. The pleasure she seemed to derive from it, and her more than usual gaiety, appeared to me so thoroughly natural, that I found it impossible any longer to suspect the treason I had previously conjured up; and I was several times on the point of candidly opening

my mind to her, and throwing off a load that had begun to weigh heavily upon my heart: but I flattered myself with the hope that the explanation would come from her, and I anticipated the delicious triumph this would afford me.

We returned to her boudoir. She again began to put my hair in order, and I humoured all her whims; when they came to say that the Prince of.—— was below, and wished to see her. The name alone almost threw me into a rage.

"What then," exclaimed I, as I indignantly pushed her from me, "Who?—what Prince?"

She made no answer to my inquiries.

"Show him upstairs," said she coolly to the servant; and then turning towards me, "Dearest love! you whom I so fervently adore," she added in the most bewitching tone, "I only ask of you one moment's compliance with my whims; one moment, one single moment! I will love you ten thousand times more than ever: your patience now shall never, during my life, be forgotten."

Indignation and astonishment deprived me of the power of utterance. She renewed her entreaties, and I could not find adequate expressions to convey my feeling of anger and contempt. But hearing the door of the antechamber open, she grasped with one hand my locks, which were floating over my shoulders, while she took her toilette mirror in the other, and with all her strength led me in this manner to the

door of the boudoir, which she opened with her knee, and presented to the foreigner, who had been prevented by the noise he heard inside from advancing beyond the middle of the antechamber, a spectacle that must have indeed amused him. I saw a man extremely well dressed, but with a particularly ill-favoured countenance.

Notwithstanding his embarrassment, he made her a profound bow. Manon gave him no time for speech-making ; she held up the mirror before him : " Look, sir," said she to him, " observe yourself minutely, and I only ask you then to do me justice. You wish me to love you : this is the man whom I love, and whom I have sworn to love during my whole life : make the comparison yourself. If you think you can rival him in my affections, tell me at least upon what pretensions ; for I solemnly declare to you, that, in the estimation of your most obedient humble servant, all the princes in Italy are not worth a single one of the hairs I now hold in my hand."

During this whimsical harangue, which she had apparently prepared beforehand, I tried in vain to disengage myself, and feeling compassion for a person of such consideration, I was desirous, by my politeness at least, of making some reparation for this little outrage. But recovering his self-possession with the ease of a man accustomed to the world, he put an end to my feelings of pity by his reply, which was, in my opinion, rude enough.

"Young lady! young lady," said he to her, with a sardonic smile, "my eyes in truth are opened, and I perceive that you are much less of a novice than I had pictured to myself."

He immediately retired without looking at her again, muttering to himself that the French women were quite as bad as those of Italy. I felt little desire, on this occasion, to change his opinion of the fair sex.

Manon let go my hand, threw herself into an arm-chair, and made the room resound with her shouts of laughter. I candidly confess that I was touched most sensibly by this unexpected proof of her affections, and by the sacrifice of her own interest which I had just witnessed, and which she could only have been induced to make by her excessive love for me. Still, however, I could not help thinking she had gone rather too far. I reproached her with what I called her indiscretion.

She told me that my rival, after having besieged her for several days in the Bois de Boulogne, and having made her comprehend his object by signs and grimaces, had actually made an open declaration of love; informing her at the same time of his name and all his titles, by means of a letter, which he had sent through the hands of the coachman who drove her and her companions; that he had promised her, on the other side of the Alps, a brilliant fortune and eternal adoration; that she returned to Chaillot, with

the intention of relating to me the whole adventure, but that, fancying it might be made a source of amusement to us, she could not help gratifying her whim ; that she accordingly invited the Italian prince, by a flattering note, to pay her a visit ; and that it had afforded her equal delight to make me an accomplice, without giving me the least suspicion of her plan. I said not a word of the information I had received through another channel ; and the intoxication of triumphant love made me applaud all she had done.

During my life I have remarked that Fate has invariably chosen for the time of its severest visitations, those moments when my fortune seemed established on the firmest basis. In the friendship of M. de T——, and the tender affections of Manon, I imagined myself so thoroughly happy, that I could not harbour the slightest apprehension of any new misfortune : there was one nevertheless at this very period impending, which reduced me to the state in which you beheld me at Passy, and which eventually brought in its train miseries of so deplorable a nature, that you will have difficulty in believing the simple recital that follows.

One evening, when M. de T——remained to sup with us, we heard the sound of a carriage stopping at the door of the inn. Curiosity tempted us to see who it was that arrived at this hour. They told us it was young G—— M——, the son of our most vindictive enemy, of that old sinner who had incarcerated me in

St Lazare, and Manon in the hospital. His name made the blood mount to my cheeks.—“It is Providence that has led him here,” said I to M. de T——, “that I may punish him for the cowardly baseness of his father. He shall not escape without our measuring swords at least.” M. de T——, who knew him, and was even one of his most intimate friends, tried to moderate my feelings of anger towards him. He assured me that he was a most amiable young man, and so little capable of countenancing his father’s conduct, that I could not be many minutes in his society without feeling esteem and affection for him. After saying many more things in his praise, he begged my permission to invite him to come and sit in our apartment, and share the remainder of our supper. As to the objection of Manon being exposed by this proceeding to any danger, he pledged his honour and good faith, that whence once the young man became acquainted with us, we should find him a most zealous defender. After such an assurance, I could offer no farther opposition.

M. de T—— did not introduce him without delaying a few moments outside, to let him know who we were. He certainly came in with an air that prepossessed us in his favour: he shook hands with me; we sat down; he admired Manon; he appeared pleased with me, and with everything that belonged to us, and he ate with an appetite that did abundant honour to our hospitality.

When the table was cleared, our conversation became more serious. He hung down his head while he spoke of his father's conduct towards us. He made, on his part, the most submissive excuses.—“I say the less upon the subject,” said he, “because I do not wish to recall a circumstance that fills me with grief and shame.” If he was sincere in the beginning, he became much more so in the end, for the conversation had not lasted half an hour, when I perceived that Manon's charms had made a visible impression upon him. His looks and his manner became by degrees more tender. He, however, allowed no expression to escape him ; but, without even the aid of jealousy, I had had experience enough in love affairs to discern what was passing.

He remained with us till a late hour in the night, and before he took his leave, congratulated himself on having made our acquaintance, and begged permission to call and renew the offer of his services. He went off next morning with M. de T——, who accepted an offer of a seat in his carriage.

I felt, as I had before said, not the slightest symptom of jealousy : I had a more foolish confidence than ever in Manon's vows. This dear creature had so absolute a dominion over my whole soul and affections, that I could give place to no other sentiment towards her than that of admiration and love. Far from considering it a crime that she should have pleased young G—— M——, I was gratified by the effect of her

charms, and experienced only a feeling of pride in being loved by a girl whom the whole world found so enchanting. I did not even deem it worth while to mention my suspicion to her. We were for some days occupied in arranging her new wardrobe, and in considering whether we might venture to the theatre without the risk of being recognised. M. de T—— came again to see us before the end of the week, and we consulted him upon this point. He saw clearly that the way to please Manon was to say yes: we resolved to go all together that same evening.

We were not able, however, to carry this intention into effect; for, having taken me aside:—"I have been in the greatest embarrassment," said he to me, "since I saw you, and that is the cause of my visiting you to-day. G—— M—— is in love with your mistress: he told me so in confidence; I am his intimate friend, and disposed to do him any service in my power; but I am not less devoted to you; his designs appeared to me unjustifiable, and I expressed my disapprobation of them; I should not have divulged his secret, if he had only intended to use fair and ordinary means for gaining Manon's affections; but he is aware of her capricious disposition; he has learned, God knows how, that her ruling passion is for affluence and pleasure; and, as he is already in possession of a considerable fortune, he declared his intention of tempting her at once with a present of great value, and the offer of an annuity of six thousand

france ; if I had in all other points considered you both in an equal light, I should have had perhaps to do more violence to my feelings in betraying him : but a sense of justice as well as of friendship was on your side, and the more so from having been myself the imprudent, though unconscious cause of his passion in introducing him here. I feel it my duty therefore to avert any evil consequences from the mischief I have inadvertently caused."

I thanked M. de T—— for rendering me so important a service, and confessed to him, in a like spirit of confidence, that Manon's disposition was precisely what G—— M—— had imagined ; that is to say, that she was incapable of enduring even the thought of poverty.—"However," said I to him, "when it is a mere question of more or less, I do not believe that she would give me up for any other person ; I can afford to let her want for nothing, and I have from day to day reason to hope that my fortune will improve ; I only dread one thing," continued I, "which is, that G—— M—— may take unfair advantage of the knowledge he has of our place of residence, and bring us into trouble by disclosing it."

M. de T—— assured me that I might be perfectly easy upon that head ; that G—— M—— might be capable of a silly passion, but not of an act of baseness : that if he ever could be villain enough for such a thing, he, de T——, would be the first to punish him, and by that means make reparation for the mis-

chief he had occasioned.—“I feel gratified for what you say,” said I, “but the mischief will have been all done, and the remedy even seems doubtful ; the wisest plan therefore will be to quit Chaillot, and go to reside elsewhere.”—“Very true,” said M. de T——, “but you will not be able to do it quickly enough, for G—— M—— is to be here at noon ; he told me so yesterday, and it was that intelligence that made me come so early this morning to inform you of his intentions. You may expect him every instant.”

[The urgency of the moment made me view this matter in a more serious light. As it seemed to me impossible to escape the visit of G—— M——, and perhaps equally so to prevent him from making his declaration to Manon, I resolved to tell beforehand of the designs of my new rival. I fancied that when she knew I was aware of the offers that would be made to her, and made probably in my presence, she would be the more likely to reject them. I told M. de T—— of my intentions, and he observed that he thought it a matter of extreme delicacy.—“I admit it,” said I, “but no man ever had more reason for confiding in a mistress, than I have for relying on the affection of mine. The only thing that could possibly for a moment blind her, is the splendour of his offers ; no doubt she loves her ease, but she loves me also ; and in my present circumstances, I cannot believe that she would abandon me for the son of the man who had incarcerated her in the Magdalen.” In fine, I persisted

is my intentions, and taking Manon aside, I candidly told her what I had learned.

She thanked me for the good opinion I entertained of her, and promised to receive G—— M——'s offers in a way that should prevent a repetition of them.—“No,” said I, “you must not irritate him by incivility ; he has it in his power to injure us. But you know well enough, you little rogue,” continued I, smiling, “how to rid yourself of a disagreeable or useless lover !” After a moment's pause she said : “I have just thought of an admirable plan, and I certainly have a fertile invention. G—— M—— is the son of our bitterest enemy : we must avenge ourselves on the father, not through the son's person, but through his purse. My plan is to listen to his proposals, accept his presents, and then laugh at him.”

“The project is not a bad one,” said I to her ; “but you forget, my dear child, that it is precisely the same course that conducted us formerly to the Penitentiary.” I represented to her the danger of such an enterprise ; she replied, that the only thing necessary was to take our measures with caution, and she found an answer to every objection I started. Shew me the lover who does not blindly humour every whim of an adored mistress, and I will then allow that I was wrong in yielding so easily on this occasion. The resolution was taken to make a dupe of G—— M——, and by an unforeseen and unlucky turn of fortune, I became the victim myself.

About eleven o'clock his carriage drove up to the door. He made the most complaisant and refined speeches upon the liberty he had taken of coming to dine with us uninvited. He was not surprised at meeting M. de T——, who had the night before promised to meet him there, and who had, under some pretext or other, refused a seat in his carriage. Although there was not a single person in the party who was not at heart meditating treachery, we all sat down with an air of mutual confidence and friendship. G—— M—— easily found an opportunity of declaring his sentiments to Manon. I did not wish to annoy him by appearing vigilant, so I left the room purposely for several minutes.

I perceived on my return that he had not had to encounter any very discouraging austerity on Manon's part, for he was in the best possible spirits. I affected good humour also. He was laughing in his mind at my simplicity, while I was not less diverted by his own. During the whole evening we were thus supplying to each other an inexhaustible fund of amusement. I contrived, before his departure, to let him have Manon for another moment to himself; so that he had reason to applaud my complaisance, as well as the hospitable reception I had given him.

As soon as he got into his carriage with M. de T——, Manon ran towards me with extended arms, and embraced me; laughing all the while immoderately. She repeated all his speeches and proposals, without

altering a word. This was the substance :—He, of course, adored her ; and wished to share with her a large fortune of which he was already in possession, without counting what he was to inherit at his father's death. She should be sole mistress of his heart and fortune ; and as an immediate token of his liberality, he was ready at once to supply her with an equipage, a furnished house, a lady's maid, three footmen, and a man-cook.

"There is indeed a son," said I, "very different from his father ! But tell me truly, now, does not such an offer tempt you ?" — "Me," she replied, adapting to the idea two verses from Racine,—

Moi ! vous me soupçonnez de cette perfidie ?
Moi ! je pourrais souffrir un visage odieux,
Qui rappelle toujours l'Hôpital à mes yeux ?

"No ! replied I, continuing the parody,—

J'aurais peine à penser que l'Hôpital, madame,
Fût un trait dont l'amour l'eût gravé dans votre âme.

"But it assuredly is a temptation—a furnished house, a lady's maid, a cook, a carriage, and three servants—gallantry can offer but few more seductive temptations."

She protested that her heart was entirely mine, and that it was for the future only open to the impressions I chose to make upon it.—"I look upon his promises," said she, "as an instrument for revenge, rather than as a mark of love." I asked her if she

thought of accepting the hôtel and the carriage. She replied that his money was all she wanted.

The difficulty was, how to obtain the one without the other ; we resolved to wait for a detailed explanation of the whole project in a letter which G—— M—— had promised to write to her, and which in fact she received next morning by a servant out of livery, who very cleverly contrived an opportunity of speaking to her alone. She told him to wait for an answer, and immediately brought the letter to me : we opened it together.

Passing over the usual commonplace expressions of tenderness, it gave a particular detail of my rival's promises. There were no limits to his extravagance. He engaged to pay her down ten thousand francs on her taking possession of the hôtel, and to supply her in such a way that she should never have less than that sum at her command. The appointed day for her entering into possession was close at hand. He only required two days for all his preparations, and he mentioned the name of the street and the hôtel, where he promised to be in waiting for her in the afternoon of the second day, if she could manage to escape my vigilance. That was the only point upon which he begged of her to relieve his uneasiness ; he seemed to be quite satisfied upon every other : but he added that, if she apprehended any difficulty in escaping from me, he could find sure means for facilitating her flight.

[G—M— the younger was more cunning than the old gentleman. He wanted to secure his prey before he counted out the cash.] We considered what course Manon should adopt. I made another effort to induce her to give up the scheme, and strongly represented all its dangers ; nothing, however, could shake her determination.

Her answer to G— M— was brief, merely assuring him that she could be, without the least difficulty, in Paris on the appointed day, and that he might expect her with certainty.

We then resolved that I should instantly hire lodgings in some village on the other side of Paris, and that I should take our luggage with me ; that in the afternoon of the following day, which was the time appointed, she should go to Paris ; that, after receiving G— M—'s presents, she should earnestly entreat him to take her to the theatre ; that she should carry with her as large a portion of the money as she could, and charge my servant with the remainder, for it was agreed that he was to accompany her. He was the man who had rescued her from the Magdalen, and he was devotedly attached to us. I was to be with a hackney coach at the end of the street of St. André-des-arcs, and to leave it there about seven o'clock while I stole, under cover of the twilight, to the door of the theatre. Manon promised to make some excuse for quitting her box for a moment, when she would come down and join me. The rest could be easily

Her glorious downfall in both cases is not due
to our misdeeds. Her sufferings are not the
of sin. Each time is false because
in to Manon.

done. We were then to return to my hackney-coach,
and quit Paris by the Faubourg St. Antoine, which
was the road to our new residence.

This plan, extravagant as it was, appeared to us
satisfactorily arranged. But our greatest folly was in
imagining that, succeed as we might in its execution,
it would be possible for us to escape the consequences.
Nevertheless, we exposed ourselves to all risk with the
blindest confidence.

~~~~~  
END of Vol. 2.  
~~~~~

[Collectanea Adamantæa.]

**Manon Lescaut and the
Chevalier des Grieux.**

*This edition is limited to 275 small-paper copies,
and 75 large-paper copies.*

[COLLECTANEA ADAMANTÆA.—XVII.]

THE HISTORY OF
MANON LESCAUT

AND

The Chevalier des Grieux.

*A TRANSLATION FROM THE FRENCH
OF THE ABBÉ PRÉVOST*

BY

D. C. MOYLAN

~~~~~  
Revised and Corrected by

EDMUND GOLDSMID, F.R.H.S.,  
F.S.A. (Scot.)

~~~~~  
THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

—•—
PRIVATELY PRINTED,
EDINBURGH.

—
1886.





VOLUME III.

MANON took her departure with Marcel,—so was the servant called. I could not help feeling a pang as she took leave of me.—“Manon” said I, “do not deceive me; will you be faithful to me?” She complained, in the tenderest tone, of my want of confidence, and renewed all her protestations of eternal love.

She expected to be in Paris at three o'clock. I started some time after her. I spent the remainder of the afternoon moping in the Café de Féré, near the Pont St. Michel. I remained there till night-fall. I then hired a hackney-coach, which I placed, according to our plan, at the end of the street of St. André-des-arts, and went on foot to the door of the theatre. I was surprised at not seeing Marcel, who was to have been there waiting for me. I waited patiently for a full hour, standing among a crowd of lacqueys, and gazing at every person that passed. At length, seven o'clock having struck, without my being able to discover anything or any person connected with our project, I procured a pit ticket, in order to ascertain

Apr. 1871 ...

if Manon and G—— M—— were in the boxes. Neither one nor the other could I find. I returned to the door, where I again stopped for a quarter of an hour, in an agony of impatience and uneasiness. No person appeared, and I went back to the coach, without knowing what to conjecture. The coachman, seeing me, advanced a few paces towards me, and said with a mysterious air, that a very handsome young person had been waiting more than an hour for me in the coach; that she described me, so exactly that he could not be mistaken, and having learned that I intended to return, she said she would enter the coach, and wait with patience.

I felt confident that it was Manon. I approached. I beheld a very pretty face, certainly, but alas, not hers. The lady asked, in a voice that I had never before heard, whether she had the honour of speaking to the Chevalier des Grieux? I answered, "That is my name."—"I have a letter for you" said she, "which will tell you what has brought me here, and by what means I learned your name." I begged she would allow me a few moments to read it, in an adjoining café. She proposed to follow me, and advised me to ask for a private room, to which I consented. "Who is the writer of this letter?" I inquired. She referred me to the letter itself.

I recognised Manon's hand. This is nearly the substance of the letter: G—— M—— had received her with a politeness and magnificence beyond any-

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and, at the same time, renounce all women,

who, without her fascination, are no doubt her equals in baseness and infidelity."

I was then on the point of going away, determined never to bestow another thought on Manon: the mortal jealousy that was racking my heart lay concealed under a dark and sullen melancholy, and I fancied, because I felt none of those violent emotions which I had experienced upon former occasions that I had shaken off my thralldom. Alas! I was even at that moment infinitely more the dupe of Love, than of G——M—— and Manon.

The girl who had brought the letter, seeing me about to depart, asked me what I wished her to say to M. G——M——, and to the lady who was with him? At this question, I stepped back again into the room, and by one of those unaccountable transitions that are only known to the victims of violent passion, I passed in an instant from the state of subdued tranquility which I have just described, into an ungovernable fury.—"Away!" said I to her; "tell the traitor G——M—— and his abandoned mistress the state of despair into which your accursed mission has cast me; but warn them that it shall not be long a source of amusement to them, and that my own hands shall be warmed with the heart's blood of both!" I sank back upon a chair; my hat fell on one side, and my cane upon the other: torrents of bitter tears rolled down my cheeks. The paroxysm of rage changed into a profound and silent grief: I did nothing but

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at his unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore, —how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

five o'clock ; and that, having followed the servant who had been despatched to her, she was shown into a large house, where she found him playing at picquet with a beautiful young woman ; and that they both charged her to deliver the letter into my hands, after telling her that she would find me in a hackney-coach at the bottom of the street of St. Andr . I asked if they had said nothing more. She blushed while she replied, that they had certainly made her believe that I should be glad of her society.—“ They have deceived you too,” said I, “ my poor girl,—they have deceived you ; you are a woman, and want a lover ; but you want one who is rich and happy, and it is not here you will find him. Return, return to M. G—— M—— ; he possesses everything to make a man beloved. He has furnished houses and equipages to bestow, while I, who have nothing but constancy and love to offer, am despised for my poverty, and laughed at for my simplicity.”

I continued in a tone of sorrow or violence, as these feelings alternately took possession of my mind. However, by the very excess of my agitation, I became gradually so subdued as to be able calmly to reflect upon the situation of affairs. I compared this new misfortune with those which I had already experienced of the same kind, and I could not perceive that there was any more reason for despairing now than upon former occasions. I knew Manon : why then disturb myself on account of a calamity, which I could not

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at this unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore,—how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

This determination pacified me, and I gave a liberal present to the girl, who was still with me ; and in order to prevent her from returning to those who had sent her, I took down her address, and led her to hope that I would go and pass the night with her. I then got into the hackney-coach, and drove quickly to M. de T——'s. I was fortunate enough to find him at home. I had been apprehensive upon this point as I went along. A single sentence put him in possession of the whole case, as well of my sufferings, as of the friendly service I had come to beg at his hands.

He was so astonished to learn that G—— M—— had been able to seduce Manon that, not being aware that I had myself lent a hand to my own misfortune, he generously offered to assemble his friends, and evoke their aid for the deliverance of my mistress. I told him that such a proceeding might by its publicity be attended with danger to Manon and to me.—“Let us risk our lives,” said I, “only as a last resource. My plan is of a more peaceful nature, and promising at least equal success.” He entered without a murmur into all that I proposed ; so again stating that all that I required was, that he should send for G—— M——, and contrive to keep him an hour or two from home, we at once set about our operations.

We first considered what expedient he could make use of for keeping him out so long a time. I proposed that he should write a note dated from a café, begging

him to come there as soon as possible upon an affair of too urgent importance to admit of delay. "I will watch," added I, "the moment he quits the house, and introduce myself without any difficulty, being only known to Manon, and my servant Marcel. You can at the same time tell G—— M—— that the important affair upon which you wished to see him, was the immediate want of a sum of money; that you had just emptied your purse at play, and that you had played on, with continued bad luck, upon credit. He will require some time to take you to his father's house, where he keeps his money, and I shall have quite sufficient for the execution of my plan."

M. de T—— minutely adhered to these directions. I left him in a café, where he at once wrote his letter. I took my station close by Manon's house. I saw T——'s messenger arrive, and G—— M—— come out the next moment, followed by a servant. Allowing him barely time to get out of the street, I advanced to my deceiver's door, and notwithstanding the anger I felt, I knocked with as much respect as at the portal of a church. Fortunately it was Marcel who opened for me. Although I had nothing to apprehend from the other servants, I asked him in a low voice, if he could conduct me unseen into the room in which Manon was. He said that was easily done, by merely ascending the great staircase. "Come then at once," said I to him, "and endeavour to prevent any one

from coming up while I am there." I reached the apartment without any difficulty.

Manon was reading. I had then an opportunity of admiring the singular character of this girl. Instead of being nervous and alarmed at my appearance, she scarcely betrayed a symptom of surprise, which few persons, however indifferent, could have restrained, on seeing one whom they imagined to be far distant.—"Ah ! it is you, my dear love," said she, approaching to embrace me with her usual tenderness. "Good Heavens, how venturesome you are ! Who could have expected to see you in this place ?" Instead of embracing her in return, I repulsed her with indignation, and retreated two or three paces from her. This evidently disconcerted her. She remained immovable, and fixed her eyes on me, while she changed colour.

I was in reality so delighted at beholding her once more, that, with so much real cause for anger, I could hardly bring my lips to upbraid her. My heart, however, felt the cruel outrage she had inflicted upon me. I endeavoured to revive the recollection of it in my own mind, and put on a look of stern indignation. I remained silent for a few moments, when I remarked that she observed my agitation, and trembled : apparently the effect of her fears.

I could no longer endure this spectacle.—"Ah ! Manon," said I to her in the mildest tone, "faithless and perjured Manon ! How am I to complain of your conduct ? I see you pale and trembling ; and I

am still so much alive to your slightest sufferings, that I am unwilling to add to them by my reproaches. But Manon, I tell you that my heart is pierced with sorrow at your treatment of me,—treatment that is seldom inflicted but with the purpose of destroying life. This is the third time, Manon ; I have kept a correct account ; it is impossible to forget that. It is now for you to consider what course you will adopt, for my afflicted heart is no longer capable of sustaining such shocks. I know and feel that it must give way, and it is at this moment ready to burst with grief. I can say no more," added I, throwing myself into a chair ; "I have hardly strength to speak, or to support myself."

She made me no reply ; but when I was seated, she sank down upon her knees, and rested her head upon my lap, covering her face with her hands. I perceived in a moment that she was shedding floods of tears. Heavens ! with what conflicting sensations was I at that instant agitated ! "Ah ! Manon, Manon," said I, sighing, "it is too late to give me tears after the death-blow you have inflicted. You affect a sorrow which you cannot feel. The greatest of your misfortunes is no doubt my presence, which has been always an obstacle to your happiness. Open your eyes ; look up and see who it is that is here ; you will not throw away tears of tenderness upon an unhappy wretch, whom you have betrayed and abandoned."

She kissed my hands without changing her position.

if Manon and G—— M—— were in the boxes. Neither one nor the other could I find. I returned to the door, where I again stopped for a quarter of an hour, in an agony of impatience and uneasiness. No person appeared, and I went back to the coach, without knowing what to conjecture. The coachman, seeing me, advanced a few paces towards me, and said with a mysterious air, that a very handsome young person had been waiting more than an hour for me in the coach ; that she described me, so exactly that he could not be mistaken, and having learned that I intended to return, she said she would enter the coach, and wait with patience.

I felt confident that it was Manon. I approached. I beheld a very pretty face, certainly, but alas, not hers. The lady asked, in a voice that I had never before heard, whether she had the honour of speaking to the Chevalier des Grieux ? I answered, "That is my name."—"I have a letter for you" said she, "which will tell you what has brought me here, and by what means I learned your name." I begged she would allow me a few moments to read it, in an adjoining café. She proposed to follow me, and advised me to ask for a private room, to which I consented. "Who is the writer of this letter ?" I inquired. She referred me to the letter itself.

I recognised Manon's hand. This is nearly the substance of the letter : G—— M—— had received her with a politeness and magnificence beyond any-

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. ~~Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and at the same time renounce all women.~~

who, without her fascination, are no doubt her equals in baseness and infidelity."

I was then on the point of going away, determined never to bestow another thought on Manon: the mortal jealousy that was racking my heart lay concealed under a dark and sullen melancholy, and I fancied, because I felt none of those violent emotions which I had experienced upon former occasions that I had shaken off my thralldom. Alas! I was even at that moment infinitely more the dupe of Love, than of G——M—— and Manon.

The girl who had brought the letter, seeing me about to depart, asked me what I wished her to say to M. G——M——, and to the lady who was with him? At this question, I stepped back again into the room, and by one of those unaccountable transitions that are only known to the victims of violent passion, I passed in an instant from the state of subdued tranquility which I have just described, into an ungovernable fury.—"Away!" said I to her; "tell the traitor G——M—— and his abandoned mistress the state of despair into which your accursed mission has cast me; but warn them that it shall not be long a source of amusement to them, and that my own hands shall be warmed with the heart's blood of both!" I sank back upon a chair; my hat fell on one side, and my cane upon the other: torrents of bitter tears rolled down my cheeks. The paroxysm of rage changed into a profound and silent grief: I did nothing but

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at this unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore,—how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

five o'clock ; and that, having followed the servant who had been despatched to her, she was shown into a large house, where she found him playing at picquet with a beautiful young woman ; and that they both charged her to deliver the letter into my hands, after telling her that she would find me in a hackney-coach at the bottom of the street of St. André. I asked if they had said nothing more. She blushed while she replied, that they had certainly made her believe that I should be glad of her society.—“ They have deceived you too,” said I, “ my poor girl,—they have deceived you ; you are a woman, and want a lover ; but you want one who is rich and happy, and it is not here you will find him. Return, return to M. G—— M—— ; he possesses everything to make a man beloved. He has furnished houses and equipages to bestow, while I, who have nothing but constancy and love to offer, am despised for my poverty, and laughed at for my simplicity.”

I continued in a tone of sorrow or violence, as these feelings alternately took possession of my mind. However, by the very excess of my agitation, I became gradually so subdued as to be able calmly to reflect upon the situation of affairs. I compared this new misfortune with those which I had already experienced of the same kind, and I could not perceive that there was any more reason for despairing now than upon former occasions. I knew Manon : why then disturb myself on account of a calamity, which I could not

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at this unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore,—how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

This determination pacified me, and I gave a liberal present to the girl, who was still with me ; and in order to prevent her from returning to those who had sent her, I took down her address, and led her to hope that I would go and pass the night with her. I then got into the hackney-coach, and drove quickly to M. de T——'s. I was fortunate enough to find him at home. I had been apprehensive upon this point as I went along. A single sentence put him in possession of the whole case, as well of my sufferings, as of the friendly service I had come to beg at his hands.

He was so astonished to learn that G—— M—— had been able to seduce Manon that, not being aware that I had myself lent a hand to my own misfortune, he generously offered to assemble his friends, and evoke their aid for the deliverance of my mistress. I told him that such a proceeding might by its publicity be attended with danger to Manon and to me.—“Let us risk our lives,” said I, “only as a last resource. My plan is of a more peaceful nature, and promising at least equal success.” He entered without a murmur into all that I proposed ; so again stating that all that I required was, that he should send for G—— M——, and contrive to keep him an hour or two from home, we at once set about our operations.

We first considered what expedient he could make use of for keeping him out so long a time. I proposed that he should write a note dated from a café, begging

him to come there as soon as possible upon an affair of too urgent importance to admit of delay. "I will watch," added I, "the moment he quits the house, and introduce myself without any difficulty, being only known to Manon, and my servant Marcel. You can at the same time tell G—— M—— that the important affair upon which you wished to see him, was the immediate want of a sum of money ; that you had just emptied your purse at play, and that you had played on, with continued bad luck, upon credit. He will require some time to take you to his father's house, where he keeps his money, and I shall have quite sufficient for the execution of my plan."

M. de T—— minutely adhered to these directions. I left him in a café, where he at once wrote his letter. I took my station close by Manon's house. I saw T——'s messenger arrive, and G—— M—— come out the next moment, followed by a servant. Allowing him barely time to get out of the street, I advanced to my deceiver's door, and notwithstanding the anger I felt, I knocked with as much respect as at the portal of a church. Fortunately it was Marcel who opened for me. Although I had nothing to apprehend from the other servants, I asked him in a low voice, if he could conduct me unseen into the room in which Manon was. He said that was easily done, by merely ascending the great staircase. "Come then at once," said I to him, "and endeavour to prevent any one

from coming up while I am there." I reached the apartment without any difficulty.

Manon was reading. I had then an opportunity of admiring the singular character of this girl. Instead of being nervous and alarmed at my appearance, she scarcely betrayed a symptom of surprise, which few persons, however indifferent, could have restrained, on seeing one whom they imagined to be far distant.—“Ah ! it is you, my dear love,” said she, approaching to embrace me with her usual tenderness. “Good Heavens, how venturesome you are ! Who could have expected to see you in this place ?” Instead of embracing her in return, I repulsed her with indignation, and retreated two or three paces from her. This evidently disconcerted her. She remained immovable, and fixed her eyes on me, while she changed colour.

I was in reality so delighted at beholding her once more, that, with so much real cause for anger, I could hardly bring my lips to upbraid her. My heart, however, felt the cruel outrage she had inflicted upon me. I endeavoured to revive the recollection of it in my own mind, and put on a look of stern indignation. I remained silent for a few moments, when I remarked that she observed my agitation, and trembled : apparently the effect of her fears.

I could no longer endure this spectacle.—“Ah ! Manon,” said I to her in the mildest tone, “faithless and perjured Manon ! How am I to complain of your conduct ? I see you pale and trembling ; and I

am still so much alive to your slightest sufferings, that I am unwilling to add to them by my reproaches. But Manon, I tell you that my heart is pierced with sorrow at your treatment of me,—treatment that is seldom inflicted but with the purpose of destroying life. This is the third time, Manon ; I have kept a correct account ; it is impossible to forget that. It is now for you to consider what course you will adopt, for my afflicted heart is no longer capable of sustaining such shocks. I know and feel that it must give way, and it is at this moment ready to burst with grief. I can say no more," added I, throwing myself into a chair ; "I have hardly strength to speak, or to support myself."

She made me no reply ; but when I was seated, she sank down upon her knees, and rested her head upon my lap, covering her face with her hands. I perceived in a moment that she was shedding floods of tears. Heavens ! with what conflicting sensations was I at that instant agitated ! "Ah ! Manon, Manon," said I, sighing, "it is too late to give me tears after the death-blow you have inflicted. You affect a sorrow which you cannot feel. The greatest of your misfortunes is no doubt my presence, which has been always an obstacle to your happiness. Open your eyes ; look up and see who it is that is here ; you will not throw away tears of tenderness upon an unhappy wretch, whom you have betrayed and abandoned."

She kissed my hands without changing her position.

If Manon and G—— M—— were in the boxes. Neither one nor the other could I find. I returned to the door, where I again stopped for a quarter of an hour, in an agony of impatience and uneasiness. No person appeared, and I went back to the coach, without knowing what to conjecture. The coachman, seeing me, advanced a few paces towards me, and said with a mysterious air, that a very handsome young person had been waiting more than an hour for me in the coach ; that she described me, so exactly that he could not be mistaken, and having learned that I intended to return, she said she would enter the coach, and wait with patience.

I felt confident that it was Manon. I approached. I beheld a very pretty face, certainly, but alas, not hers. The lady asked, in a voice that I had never before heard, whether she had the honour of speaking to the Chevalier des Grieux ? I answered, "That is my name."—"I have a letter for you" said she, "which will tell you what has brought me here, and by what means I learned your name." I begged she would allow me a few moments to read it, in an adjoining café. She proposed to follow me, and advised me to ask for a private room, to which I consented. "Who is the writer of this letter ?" I inquired. She referred me to the letter itself.

I recognised Manon's hand. This is nearly the substance of the letter : G—— M—— had received her with a politeness and magnificence beyond any-

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and, at the same time, renounce all women,

who, without her fascination, are no doubt her equals in baseness and infidelity."

I was then on the point of going away, determined never to bestow another thought on Manon: the mortal jealousy that was racking my heart lay concealed under a dark and sullen melancholy, and I fancied, because I felt none of those violent emotions which I had experienced upon former occasions that I had shaken off my thralldom. Alas! I was even at that moment infinitely more the dupe of Love, than of G——M—— and Manon.

The girl who had brought the letter, seeing me about to depart, asked me what I wished her to say to M. G——M——, and to the lady who was with him? At this question, I stepped back again into the room, and by one of those unaccountable transitions that are only known to the victims of violent passion, I passed in an instant from the state of subdued tranquility which I have just described, into an ungovernable fury.—"Away!" said I to her; "tell the traitor G——M—— and his abandoned mistress the state of despair into which your accursed mission has cast me; but warn them that it shall not be long a source of amusement to them, and that my own hands shall be warmed with the heart's blood of both!" I sank back upon a chair; my hat fell on one side, and my cane upon the other: torrents of bitter tears rolled down my cheeks. The paroxysm of rage changed into a profound and silent grief: I did nothing but

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and, at the same time, renounce all women.

five o'clock ; and that, having followed the servant who had been despatched to her, she was shown into a large house, where she found him playing at picquet with a beautiful young woman ; and that they both charged her to deliver the letter into my hands, after telling her that she would find me in a hackney-coach at the bottom of the street of St. Andr . I asked if they had said nothing more. She blushed while she replied, that they had certainly made her believe that I should be glad of her society.—“ They have deceived you too,” said I, “ my poor girl,—they have deceived you ; you are a woman, and want a lover ; but you want one who is rich and happy, and it is not here you will find him. Return, return to M. G—— M—— ; he possesses everything to make a man beloved. He has furnished houses and equipages to bestow, while I, who have nothing but constancy and love to offer, am despised for my poverty, and laughed at for my simplicity.”

I continued in a tone of sorrow or violence, as these feelings alternately took possession of my mind. However, by the very excess of my agitation, I became gradually so subdued as to be able calmly to reflect upon the situation of affairs. I compared this new misfortune with those which I had already experienced of the same kind, and I could not perceive that there was any more reason for despairing now than upon former occasions. I knew Manon : why then disturb myself on account of a calamity, which I could not

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at this unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore, —how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

This determination pacified me, and I gave a liberal present to the girl, who was still with me ; and in order to prevent her from returning to those who had sent her, I took down her address, and led her to hope that I would go and pass the night with her. I then got into the hackney-coach, and drove quickly to M. de T——'s. I was fortunate enough to find him at home. I had been apprehensive upon this point as I went along. A single sentence put him in possession of the whole case, as well of my sufferings, as of the friendly service I had come to beg at his hands.

He was so astonished to learn that G—— M—— had been able to seduce Manon that, not being aware that I had myself lent a hand to my own misfortune, he generously offered to assemble his friends, and evoke their aid for the deliverance of my mistress. I told him that such a proceeding might by its publicity be attended with danger to Manon and to me.—“Let us risk our lives,” said I, “only as a last resource. My plan is of a more peaceful nature, and promising at least equal success.” He entered without a murmur into all that I proposed ; so again stating that all that I required was, that he should send for G—— M——, and contrive to keep him an hour or two from home, we at once set about our operations.

We first considered what expedient he could make use of for keeping him out so long a time. I proposed that he should write a note dated from a café, begging

him to come there as soon as possible upon an affair of too urgent importance to admit of delay. "I will watch," added I, "the moment he quits the house, and introduce myself without any difficulty, being only known to Manon, and my servant Marcel. You can at the same time tell G—— M—— that the important affair upon which you wished to see him, was the immediate want of a sum of money; that you had just emptied your purse at play, and that you had played on, with continued bad luck, upon credit. He will require some time to take you to his father's house, where he keeps his money, and I shall have quite sufficient for the execution of my plan."

M. de T—— minutely adhered to these directions. I left him in a café, where he at once wrote his letter. I took my station close by Manon's house. I saw T——'s messenger arrive, and G—— M—— come out the next moment, followed by a servant. Allowing him barely time to get out of the street, I advanced to my deceiver's door, and notwithstanding the anger I felt, I knocked with as much respect as at the portal of a church. Fortunately it was Marcel who opened for me. Although I had nothing to apprehend from the other servants, I asked him in a low voice, if he could conduct me unseen into the room in which Manon was. He said that was easily done, by merely ascending the great staircase. "Come then at once," said I to him, "and endeavour to prevent any one

from coming up while I am there." I reached the apartment without any difficulty.

Manon was reading. I had then an opportunity of admiring the singular character of this girl. Instead of being nervous and alarmed at my appearance, she scarcely betrayed a symptom of surprise, which few persons, however indifferent, could have restrained, on seeing one whom they imagined to be far distant.—“Ah ! it is you, my dear love,” said she, approaching to embrace me with her usual tenderness. “Good Heavens, how venturesome you are ! Who could have expected to see you in this place ?” Instead of embracing her in return, I repulsed her with indignation, and retreated two or three paces from her. This evidently disconcerted her. She remained immovable, and fixed her eyes on me, while she changed colour.

I was in reality so delighted at beholding her once more, that, with so much real cause for anger, I could hardly bring my lips to upbraid her. My heart, however, felt the cruel outrage she had inflicted upon me. I endeavoured to revive the recollection of it in my own mind, and put on a look of stern indignation. I remained silent for a few moments, when I remarked that she observed my agitation, and trembled : apparently the effect of her fears.

I could no longer endure this spectacle.—“Ah ! Manon,” said I to her in the mildest tone, “faithless and perjured Manon ! How am I to complain of your conduct ? I see you pale and trembling ; and I

am still so much alive to your slightest sufferings, that I am unwilling to add to them by my reproaches. But Manon, I tell you that my heart is pierced with sorrow at your treatment of me,—treatment that is seldom inflicted but with the purpose of destroying life. This is the third time, Manon ; I have kept a correct account ; it is impossible to forget that. It is now for you to consider what course you will adopt, for my afflicted heart is no longer capable of sustaining such shocks. I know and feel that it must give way, and it is at this moment ready to burst with grief. I can say no more," added I, throwing myself into a chair ; "I have hardly strength to speak, or to support myself."

She made me no reply ; but when I was seated, she sank down upon her knees, and rested her head upon my lap, covering her face with her hands. I perceived in a moment that she was shedding floods of tears. Heavens ! with what conflicting sensations was I at that instant agitated ! "Ah ! Manon, Manon," said I, sighing, "it is too late to give me tears after the death-blow you have inflicted. You affect a sorrow which you cannot feel. The greatest of your misfortunes is no doubt my presence, which has been always an obstacle to your happiness. Open your eyes ; look up and see who it is that is here ; you will not throw away tears of tenderness upon an unhappy wretch, whom you have betrayed and abandoned."

She kissed my hands without changing her position.

‘Inconstant Manon,’ said I again, “ungrateful and faithless girl, where now are all your promises and your vows? Capricious and cruel that you are; what has now become of the love that you protested for me this very day? Just Heavens,” added I, “is it thus you permit a traitress to mock you, after having called you so solemnly to witness her vows! Recompense and reward then are for the perjured! Despair and neglect are the lot of fidelity and truth!”

These words raised memories so bitter, that, in spite of myself, some tears escaped from my eyes. Manon perceived this by the change in my voice. She at length spoke. “I must have indeed done something most culpable,” said she, sobbing with grief, “to have excited and annoyed you to this degree; but I call Heaven to attest my utter unconsciousness of crime, and my innocence of all criminal intention!”

This speech struck me as so devoid of reason and of truth, that I could not restrain my anger. “Horrible hypocrisy!” cried I; “I see more plainly than ever that you are a wretch and a treacherous creature. Now at length I learn your wretched disposition. Adieu, base creature,” said I, rising from my seat; “I would prefer death a thousand times rather than continue to hold the slightest communication with you. May Heaven punish me, if I ever again waste upon you the smallest regard! Live on with your new lover,—love him,—detest me,—renounce all feelings of honour and common sense!”

Manon was so terrified by the violence of my anger that, remaining on her knees by the chair from which I had just before risen, breathless and trembling, she fixed her eyes upon me. I advanced a little farther towards the door, but, unless I had lost the last spark of humanity, I could not continue longer unmoved by such a spectacle.

So far indeed was I from this kind of stoical indifference, that, rushing at once into the very opposite extreme, I returned, or rather flew back to her without an instant's reflection. I lifted her in my arms ; I gave her a thousand tender kisses ; I implored her to pardon my ungovernable temper ; I confessed that I was an absolute brute, and unworthy of being loved by such an angel.

I made her sit down, and throwing myself, in my turn, upon my knees, I conjured her to listen to me in that attitude. Then I briefly expressed all that a submissive and impassioned lover could say. I begged her pardon. She let her arms fall over my neck, as she said it was she who stood in need of forgiveness, and begged of me in mercy to forget all the annoyances she had caused me, for she began, with reason, to fear that I should not approve of what she had to say in her justification. "Me!" said I, interrupting her impatiently ; "I require no justification ; I approve of all you have done. It is not for me to demand excuses for anything you do ; I am but too happy, too contented, if my dear Manon

If Manon and G—— M—— were in the boxes. Neither one nor the other could I find. I returned to the door, where I again stopped for a quarter of an hour, in an agony of impatience and uneasiness. No person appeared, and I went back to the coach, without knowing what to conjecture. The coachman, seeing me, advanced a few paces towards me, and said with a mysterious air, that a very handsome young person had been waiting more than an hour for me in the coach; that she described me, so exactly that he could not be mistaken, and having learned that I intended to return, she said she would enter the coach, and wait with patience.

I felt confident that it was Manon. I approached. I beheld a very pretty face, certainly, but alas, not hers. The lady asked, in a voice that I had never before heard, whether she had the honour of speaking to the Chevalier des Grieux? I answered, "That is my name."—"I have a letter for you" said she, "which will tell you what has brought me here, and by what means I learned your name." I begged she would allow me a few moments to read it, in an adjoining café. She proposed to follow me, and advised me to ask for a private room, to which I consented. "Who is the writer of this letter?" I inquired. She referred me to the letter itself.

I recognised Manon's hand. This is nearly the substance of the letter: G—— M—— had received her with a politeness and magnificence beyond any-

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. ~~Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and, at the same time, renounce all women.~~

if Manon and G—— M—— were in the boxes. Neither one nor the other could I find. I returned to the door, where I again stopped for a quarter of an hour, in an agony of impatience and uneasiness. No person appeared, and I went back to the coach, without knowing what to conjecture. The coachman, seeing me, advanced a few paces towards me, and said with a mysterious air, that a very handsome young person had been waiting more than an hour for me in the coach; that she described me, so exactly that he could not be mistaken, and having learned that I intended to return, she said she would enter the coach, and wait with patience.

I felt confident that it was Manon. I approached. I beheld a very pretty face, certainly, but alas, not hers. The lady asked, in a voice that I had never before heard, whether she had the honour of speaking to the Chevalier des Grieux? I answered, "That is my name."—"I have a letter for you" said she, "which will tell you what has brought me here, and by what means I learned your name." I begged she would allow me a few moments to read it, in an adjoining café. She proposed to follow me, and advised me to ask for a private room, to which I consented. "Who is the writer of this letter?" I inquired. She referred me to the letter itself.

I recognised Manon's hand. This is nearly the substance of the letter: G—— M—— had received her with a politeness and magnificence beyond any-

thing she had previously conceived. He had loaded her with the most gorgeous presents. She had the prospects of almost imperial splendour. She assured me, however, that she could not forget me amidst all this magnificence ; but that, not being able to prevail on G—— M—— to take her that evening to the play, she was obliged to defer the pleasure of seeing me ; and that, as a slight consolation for the disappointment which she feared this might cause me, she had found a messenger in one of the loveliest girls in all Paris. She signed herself, "Your loving and constant, MANON LESCAUT."

There was something so cruel and so insulting in the letter, that, what between indignation and grief, I resolutely determined to forget eternally my ungrateful and perjured mistress. I looked at the young woman who stood before me : she was exceedingly pretty, and I could have wished that she had been sufficiently so to render me inconstant in my turn. But there were wanting those lovely and languishing eyes, that divine gracefulness, that exquisite complexion, in fine, those innumerable charms which nature had so profusely lavished upon the perfidious Manon. "No, no," said I, turning away from her ; "the ungrateful wretch who sent you knew in her heart that she was sending you on a useless errand. Return to her, and tell her from me, to triumph in her crime, and enjoy it, if she can, without remorse. I abandon her in despair, and, at the same time, renounce all women.

who, without her fascination, are no doubt her equals in baseness and infidelity."

I was then on the point of going away, determined never to bestow another thought on Manon: the mortal jealousy that was racking my heart lay concealed under a dark and sullen melancholy, and I fancied, because I felt none of those violent emotions which I had experienced upon former occasions that I had shaken off my thralldom. Alas! I was even at that moment infinitely more the dupe of Love, than of G——M—— and Manon.

The girl who had brought the letter, seeing me about to depart, asked me what I wished her to say to M. G——M——, and to the lady who was with him? At this question, I stepped back again into the room, and by one of those unaccountable transitions that are only known to the victims of violent passion, I passed in an instant from the state of subdued tranquility which I have just described, into an ungovernable fury.—"Away!" said I to her; "tell the traitor G——M—— and his abandoned mistress the state of despair into which your accursed mission has cast me; but warn them that it shall not be long a source of amusement to them, and that my own hands shall be warmed with the heart's blood of both!" I sank back upon a chair; my hat fell on one side, and my cane upon the other: torrents of bitter tears rolled down my cheeks. The paroxysm of rage changed into a profound and silent grief: I did nothing but

weep and sigh.—“Approach, my child, approach,” said I to the young girl; “approach, since it is you they have sent to bring me comfort; tell me whether you have any balm to administer for the pangs of despair and rage—any argument to offer against the crime of self-destruction, which I have resolved upon, after ridding the world of two monsters. Yes, approach,” continued I, perceiving that she advanced with timid and doubtful steps; “come and dry my tears; come and restore peace to my mind; come and tell me that at least you love me: you are handsome,—I may perhaps love you in return.” The poor child, who was only sixteen or seventeen years of age, and who appeared more modest than girls of her class generally are, was thunderstruck at this unusual scene. She, however, gently approached to caress me, when with uplifted hands I rudely repulsed her.—“What do you wish with me?” exclaimed I to her. “Ah! you are a woman, and of a sex I abhor, and can no longer tolerate; the very gentleness of your look threatens me with some new treason. Go, leave me here alone!” She made me a curtsy without uttering a word, and turned to go out. I called to her to stop: “Tell me at least,” said I, “wherefore, —how,—with what design they sent you here? how did you discover my name, or the place where you could find me?”

She told me that she had long known M. G—— M——; that he had sent for her that evening about

five o'clock ; and that, having followed the servant who had been despatched to her, she was shown into a large house, where she found him playing at picquet with a beautiful young woman ; and that they both charged her to deliver the letter into my hands, after telling her that she would find me in a hackney-coach at the bottom of the street of St. Andrè. I asked if they had said nothing more. She blushed while she replied, that they had certainly made her believe that I should be glad of her society.—“ They have deceived you too,” said I, “ my poor girl,—they have deceived you ; you are a woman, and want a lover ; but you want one who is rich and happy, and it is not here you will find him. Return, return to M. G—— M—— ; he possesses everything to make a man beloved. He has furnished houses and equipages to bestow, while I, who have nothing but constancy and love to offer, am despised for my poverty, and laughed at for my simplicity.”

I continued in a tone of sorrow or violence, as these feelings alternately took possession of my mind. However, by the very excess of my agitation, I became gradually so subdued as to be able calmly to reflect upon the situation of affairs. I compared this new misfortune with those which I had already experienced of the same kind, and I could not perceive that there was any more reason for despairing now than upon former occasions. I knew Manon : why then disturb myself on account of a calamity, which I could not

that he would undertake to keep him occupied for another hour at least, under some pretext, which he could devise before G—— M——'s return.

I showed the note to Manon; I told her at the same time of the manner in which I had procured the interview with her. My scheme, as well as the new one of M. de T——'s, delighted her; we laughed heartily at it for some minutes; but when I treated it as a mere joke, I was surprised at her insisting seriously upon it, as a thing perfectly practicable, and too delightful to be neglected. In vain I inquired where she thought I could possibly find, on a sudden, men fit for such an adventure? and on whom I could rely for keeping G—— M—— in strict custody? She said that I should at least try, as M. de T—— insured us yet a full hour; and as to my other objections, she said I was playing the tyrant, and did not show the slightest indulgence to her fancies. She said that it was impossible there could be a more enchanting project: "You will have his place at supper, we will sleep between his sheets, and to-morrow, as early as you like, you can walk off with both his mistress and his money. You may thus, at one blow, be amply avenged upon father and son."

I yielded to her entreaties, in spite of the secret misgivings of my own mind, which seemed to forbode the unhappy catastrophe that afterwards befel me. I went out with the intention of asking two or three guardsmen, with whom Lescaut had made me

This determination pacified me, and I gave a liberal present to the girl, who was still with me ; and in order to prevent her from returning to those who had sent her, I took down her address, and led her to hope that I would go and pass the night with her. I then got into the hackney-coach, and drove quickly to M. de T——'s. I was fortunate enough to find him at home. I had been apprehensive upon this point as I went along. A single sentence put him in possession of the whole case, as well of my sufferings, as of the friendly service I had come to beg at his hands.

He was so astonished to learn that G—— M—— had been able to seduce Manon that, not being aware that I had myself lent a hand to my own misfortune, he generously offered to assemble his friends, and evoke their aid for the deliverance of my mistress. I told him that such a proceeding might by its publicity be attended with danger to Manon and to me.—“Let us risk our lives,” said I, “only as a last resource. My plan is of a more peaceful nature, and promising at least equal success.” He entered without a murmur into all that I proposed ; so again stating that all that I required was, that he should send for G—— M——, and contrive to keep him an hour or two from home, we at once set about our operations.

We first considered what expedient he could make use of for keeping him out so long a time. I proposed that he should write a note dated from a café, begging

him to come there as soon as possible upon an affair of too urgent importance to admit of delay. "I will watch," added I, "the moment he quits the house, and introduce myself without any difficulty, being only known to Manon, and my servant Marcel. You can at the same time tell G—— M—— that the important affair upon which you wished to see him, was the immediate want of a sum of money; that you had just emptied your purse at play, and that you had played on, with continued bad luck, upon credit. He will require some time to take you to his father's house, where he keeps his money, and I shall have quite sufficient for the execution of my plan."

M. de T—— minutely adhered to these directions. I left him in a café, where he at once wrote his letter. I took my station close by Manon's house. I saw T——'s messenger arrive, and G—— M—— come out the next moment, followed by a servant. Allowing him barely time to get out of the street, I advanced to my deceiver's door, and notwithstanding the anger I felt, I knocked with as much respect as at the portal of a church. Fortunately it was Marcel who opened for me. Although I had nothing to apprehend from the other servants, I asked him in a low voice, if he could conduct me unseen into the room in which Manon was. He said that was easily done, by merely ascending the great staircase. "Come then at once," said I to him, "and endeavour to prevent any one

from coming up while I am there." I reached the apartment without any difficulty.

Manon was reading. I had then an opportunity of admiring the singular character of this girl. Instead of being nervous and alarmed at my appearance, she scarcely betrayed a symptom of surprise, which few persons, however indifferent, could have restrained, on seeing one whom they imagined to be far distant.—“Ah ! it is you, my dear love,” said she, approaching to embrace me with her usual tenderness. “Good Heavens, how venturesome you are ! Who could have expected to see you in this place ?” Instead of embracing her in return, I repulsed her with indignation, and retreated two or three paces from her. This evidently disconcerted her. She remained immovable, and fixed her eyes on me, while she changed colour.

I was in reality so delighted at beholding her once more, that, with so much real cause for anger, I could hardly bring my lips to upbraid her. My heart, however, felt the cruel outrage she had inflicted upon me. I endeavoured to revive the recollection of it in my own mind, and put on a look of stern indignation. I remained silent for a few moments, when I remarked that she observed my agitation, and trembled : apparently the effect of her fears.

I could no longer endure this spectacle.—“Ah ! Manon,” said I to her in the mildest tone, “faithless and perjured Manon ! How am I to complain of your conduct ? I see you pale and trembling ; and I

being able to discover the slightest trace of him, he went off to the house of his mistress, to which he thought he probably might by this time have returned.

I was stepping into bed when he arrived. The door of the chamber being closed, I did not hear the knock at the gate, but he rushed into the house, accompanied by two archers of the guard, and after fruitless inquiries of the servants about his son, he resolved to try whether he could get any information from his mistress. He came up to the apartment, still accompanied by the guard. We were just on the point of lying down when he burst open the door, and electrified us by his appearance. "Heavens!" said I to Manon, "it is old G—— M——." I attempted to get possession of my sword; but it was unfortunately entangled in my belt. The archers, who saw my object, advanced to lay hold of me. Stripped to my shirt, I could of course offer no resistance, and they speedily deprived me of all means of defence.

G—— M——, although a good deal embarrassed by the whole scene, soon recognised me; and Manon still more easily. "Is this a dream?" said he, in the most serious tone—"do I not see before me the Chevalier des Grieux and Manon Lescaut?" I was so overcome with shame and disappointment, that I could make him no reply. He appeared for some minutes to be revolving different thoughts in his mind; and as if they had suddenly excited his anger, he

‘Inconstant Manon,’ said I again, “ungrateful and faithless girl, where now are all your promises and your vows? Capricious and cruel that you are; what has now become of the love that you protested for me this very day? Just Heavens,” added I, “is it thus you permit a traitress to mock you, after having called you so solemnly to witness her vows! Recompense and reward then are for the perjured! Despair and neglect are the lot of fidelity and truth!”

These words raised memories so bitter, that, in spite of myself, some tears escaped from my eyes. Manon perceived this by the change in my voice. She at length spoke. “I must have indeed done something most culpable,” said she, sobbing with grief, “to have excited and annoyed you to this degree; but I call Heaven to attest my utter unconsciousness of crime, and my innocence of all criminal intention!”

This speech struck me as so devoid of reason and of truth, that I could not restrain my anger. “Horrible hypocrisy!” cried I; “I see more plainly than ever that you are a wretch and a treacherous creature. Now at length I learn your wretched disposition. Adieu, base creature,” said I, rising from my seat; “I would prefer death a thousand times rather than continue to hold the slightest communication with you. May Heaven punish me, if I ever again waste upon you the smallest regard! Live on with your new lover,—love him,—detest me,—renounce all feelings of honour and common sense!”

Manon was so terrified by the violence of my anger that, remaining on her knees by the chair from which I had just before risen, breathless and trembling, she fixed her eyes upon me. I advanced a little farther towards the door, but, unless I had lost the last spark of humanity, I could not continue longer unmoved by such a spectacle.

So far indeed was I from this kind of stoical indifference, that, rushing at once into the very opposite extreme, I returned, or rather flew back to her without an instant's reflection. I lifted her in my arms ; I gave her a thousand tender kisses ; I implored her to pardon my ungovernable temper ; I confessed that I was an absolute brute, and unworthy of being loved by such an angel.

I made her sit down, and throwing myself, in my turn, upon my knees, I conjured her to listen to me in that attitude. Then I briefly expressed all that a submissive and impassioned lover could say. I begged her pardon. She let her arms fall over my neck, as she said it was she who stood in need of forgiveness, and begged of me in mercy to forget all the annoyances she had caused me, for she began, with reason, to fear that I should not approve of what she had to say in her justification. "Me!" said I, interrupting her impatiently ; "I require no justification ; I approve of all you have done. It is not for me to demand excuses for anything you do ; I am but too happy, too contented, if my dear Manon

will only leave me master of her affections! But," continued I, remembering that it was the crisis of my fate,—“may I not, Manon, all-powerful Manon, you who wield at your pleasure my joys and sorrows, may I not be permitted, after having conciliated you by my submission and all the signs of repentance, to speak to you now of my misery and distress? May I now learn from your own lips what my destiny is to be, and whether you are resolved to sign my death-warrant, by spending even a single night with my rival?”

She considered a moment before she replied. “My good Chevalier,” said she, resuming the most tranquil tone, “if you had only at first explained yourself thus distinctly, you would have spared yourself a world of trouble, and prevented a scene that has really annoyed me. Since your distress is the result of jealousy, I could at first have cured that by offering to accompany you where you pleased. But I imagined it was caused by the letter which I was obliged to write in the presence of G—— M——, and by the girl whom we sent with it. I thought you might have construed that letter into a mockery; and have fancied that, by sending such a messenger, I meant to announce my abandonment of you for the sake of G—— M——. It was this idea that at once overwhelmed me with grief; for, innocent as I knew myself to be, I could not but allow that appearances were against me. However,” continued she, “I will leave you to judge of my conduct, after I shall have explained the whole truth.”

She then told me all that had occurred to her after joining G—— M——, whom she found punctually awaiting her arrival. He had in fact received her in the most princely style. He showed her through all the apartments, which were fitted up in the neatest and most correct taste. He had handed her in her boudoir ten thousand francs, as well as a quantity of jewels, amongst which were the identical pearl necklace and bracelets which she had once before received as a present from his father. He then led her into a splendid room, which she had not before seen, and in which an exquisite collation was served ; she was waited upon by the new servants, whom he had hired purposely for her, and whom he now desired to consider themselves as exclusively her attendants ; the carriage and the horses were afterwards paraded, and he then proposed a game of cards until supper should be announced.

“ I acknowledge,” continued Manon, “ that I was dazzled by all this magnificence. It struck me that it would be madness to sacrifice at once so many good things for the mere sake of carrying off the money and the jewels already in my possession ; that it was a certain fortune made for both you and me, and that we might pass the remainder of our lives most agreeably and comfortably at the expense of G—— M——.

“ Instead of proposing the theatre, I thought it more prudent to sound his feelings with regard to you, in order to ascertain what facilities we should have for

meeting in future, on the supposition that I could carry my project into effect. I found him of a most tractable disposition. He asked me how I felt towards you, and if I had not experienced some compunction at quitting you. I told him that you were so truly amiable, and had ever treated me with such undeviating kindness, that it was impossible I could hate you. He admitted that you were a man of merit, and expressed an ardent desire to gain your friendship.

"He was anxious to know how I thought you would take my elopement, particularly when you should learn that I was in his hands. I answered, that our love was of such long standing as to have had time to moderate a little ; that, besides, you were not in very easy circumstances, and would probably not consider my departure as a very severe misfortune, inasmuch as it would relieve you from a burden of no very insignificant nature. I added that, being perfectly convinced you would take the whole matter rationally, I had not hesitated to tell you that I had some business in Paris ; that you had at once consented, and that having accompanied me yourself, you did not seeq very uneasy when we separated.

"If I thought," said he to me, "that he could bring himself to live on good terms with me, I should be too happy to make him a tender of my services and attentions." I assured him that, from what I knew of your disposition, I had no doubt you would acknowledge his kindness in a congenial spirit : especially, I

added, if he could assist you in your affairs, which had become embarrassed since your disagreement with your family." He interrupted me by declaring that he would gladly render you any service in his power ; and that if you were disposed to form a new attachment, he would introduce you to an extremely pretty woman, whom he had just given up for me.

"I approved of all he said," she added, "for fear of exciting any suspicions ; and being more and more satisfied of the feasibility of my scheme, I only longed for an opportunity of letting you into it, lest you should be alarmed at my not keeping my appointment. With this view I suggested the idea of sending this girl to you, in order to have an opportunity of writing ; I was obliged to have recourse to this plan, because I could not see a chance of his leaving me to myself for a moment.

"He was greatly amused with my proposition ; he called his valet, and asking him whether he could immediately find his late mistress, he despatched him at once in search of her. He imagined that she would have to go to Chaillot to meet you, but I told him that, when we parted, I promised to meet you again at the theatre, or that, if anything should prevent me from going there, you were to wait for me in a coach at the end of the street of St. André ; that consequently it would be best to send your new love there, it it were only to save you from the misery of suspense during the whole night. I said it would be also

necessary to write you a line of explanation, without which you would probably be puzzled by the whole transaction. He consented ; but I was obliged to write in his presence ; and I took especial care not to explain matters too palpably in my letter.

"This is the history," said Manon, "of the entire affair. I conceal nothing from you, of either my conduct or my intentions. The girl arrived ; I thought her handsome ; and as I doubted not that you would be mortified by my absence, I did most sincerely hope that she would be able to dissipate something of your *ennui* ; for it is the fidelity of the heart alone that I value. I should have been too delighted to have sent Marcel, but I could not for a single instant find an opportunity of telling him what I wished to communicate to you." She finished her story by describing the embarrassment into which M. de T——'s letter had thrown G—— M—— ; "he hesitated," said she, "about leaving, and assured me that he should not be long absent ; and it is on this account that I am uneasy at seeing you here, and that I betrayed, at your appearance, some slight feeling of surprise."

I listened to her with great patience. There were certainly parts of her recital sufficiently cruel and mortifying ; for the intention, at least, of the infidelity was so obvious, that she had not even taken the trouble to disguise it. She certainly did not expect that G—— M—— would spend the night with her, and leave her in the state of a vestal virgin ; and yet

it was with him she had intended to spend it ! What a confession for a lover to hear ! However, I considered myself as partly the cause of her guilt, by having been the first to let her know G—— M——'s sentiments towards her, and by the silly readiness with which I entered into this rash project. Besides, by a natural bent of my mind, peculiar I believe to myself, I was attracted by the ingenuity of her story,—by that open and winning manner with which she related even the circumstances most calculated to annoy me, "There is nothing of wanton vice," said I to myself, "in her transgressions ; she is volatile and imprudent, but she is sincere and affectionate." My love alone rendered me blind to all her faults. I was enchanted at the prospect of rescuing her that very night from my rival. I said to her : " With whom did you mean to pass the night ?" She was evidently disconcerted by the question, and answered me in an embarrassed manner with *buts* and *ifs*.

I felt for her, and interrupted her by saying that I at once expected her to accompany me.

" Nothing can give me more pleasure," said she ; " but you don't approve then of my project ?"

" Is it not enough," replied I, " that I approve of all that you have, up to this moment, done ?"

" What," said she, " are we not even to take the ten thousand francs with us ? Why, he gave me the money ; it is mine."

I advised her to leave everything, and let us think

only of escaping ; for although I had been hardly half an hour with her, I began to dread the return of G—— M——. However, she so earnestly urged me to consent to our going out with something in our pockets, that I thought myself bound to make her, on my part, some concession, in return for all she yielded to me.

While we were getting ready for our departure, I heard some one knock at the street door. I felt convinced that it must be G—— M—— ; and in the heat of the moment, I told Manon, that as sure as he appeared I would take his life. In truth, I felt that I was not sufficiently recovered from my late excitement, to be able to restrain my fury if I met him. Marcel put an end to my uneasiness, by handing me a letter which he had received for me at the door ; it was from M. de T——.

He told me that, as G—— M—— had gone to his father's house for the money which he wanted, he had taken advantage of his absence to communicate to me an amusing idea that had just come into his head ;— that it appeared to him, that I could not possibly take a more agreeable revenge upon my rival, than by eating his supper, and sleeping myself that night in the bed which he had intended to occupy with my mistress. This seemed to him easy enough if I could only find two or three men, upon whom I could depend, of courage sufficient to stop him in the street, and detain him in custody until next morning ;

that he would undertake to keep him occupied for another hour at least, under some pretext, which he could devise before G—— M——'s return.

I showed the note to Manon; I told her at the same time of the manner in which I had procured the interview with her. My scheme, as well as the new one of M. de T——'s, delighted her; we laughed heartily at it for some minutes; but when I treated it as a mere joke, I was surprised at her insisting seriously upon it, as a thing perfectly practicable, and too delightful to be neglected. In vain I inquired where she thought I could possibly find, on a sudden, men fit for such an adventure? and on whom I could rely for keeping G—— M—— in strict custody? She said that I should at least try, as M. de T—— insured us yet a full hour; and as to my other objections, she said I was playing the tyrant, and did not show the slightest indulgence to her fancies. She said that it was impossible there could be a more enchanting project: "You will have his place at supper, we will sleep between his sheets, and tomorrow, as early as you like, you can walk off with both his mistress and his money. You may thus, at one blow, be amply avenged upon father and son."

I yielded to her entreaties, in spite of the secret misgivings of my own mind, which seemed to forbode the unhappy catastrophe that afterwards befel me. I went out with the intention of asking two or three guardsmen, with whom Lescaut had made me

acquainted, to undertake the arrest of G—— M——. I found only one of them at home, but he was a fellow ripe for any adventure ; and he no sooner heard our plan, than he assured me of certain success ; all he required was ten pistoles, to reward the three private soldiers whom he determined to employ in the business. I begged of him to lose no time. He got them together in less than a quarter of an hour. I waited at his lodgings till he returned with them, and then conducted him to the corner of a street, through which I knew G—— M—— must pass on going back to Manon's house. I requested him not to treat G—— M—— roughly, but to keep him confined, and so strictly watched, until seven o'clock next morning, that I might be free from all apprehension of his escape. He told me his intention was to bring him a prisoner to his own room, and make him undress and sleep in his own bed, while he and his gallant comrades should spend the night in drinking and playing.

I remained with them until we saw G—— M—— returning homewards ; and I then withdrew a few steps into a dark recess in the street, to enjoy so entertaining and extraordinary a scene. The officer challenged him with a pistol to his breast, and then told him, in a civil tone, that he did not want either his money or his life ; but that if he hesitated to follow him, or if he gave the slightest alarm, he would blow his brains out. G—— M—— seeing that his

assailant was supported by three soldiers, and perhaps not uninfluenced by a dread of the pistol, yielded without further resistance. I saw him led away like a lamb.

I soon returned to Manon ; and to prevent the servants from having any suspicion, I told her in their hearing, that she need not expect M. G—— M—— to supper ; that he was most reluctantly occupied with business which detained him, and that he had commissioned me to come and make his excuses, and to fill his place at the supper table ; which, in the company of so beautiful a lady, I could not but consider a very high honour. She seconded me with her usual adroitness. We sat down to supper. I put on the most serious air I could assume, while the servants were in the room, and at length having got rid of them, we passed, beyond all comparison, the most agreeable evening of my life. I gave Marcel orders or find a hackney-coach, and engage it to be at the gate on the following morning, a little before six o'clock. I pretended to take leave of Manon, about midnight, but easily gaining admission again through Marcel, I proceeded to occupy G—— M——'s bed as I had filled his place at supper-table.

In the meantime our evil genius was at work for our destruction. We were in the delirium of pleasure, while the sword hung suspended over our heads. The thread which upheld it was just about to break ; but the better to understand all the circumstances of our ruin, it is necessary to know its immediate cause.

G—— M—— was followed by a servant, when he was stopped by my friend the guardsman. Alarmed by what he saw, this fellow retraced his steps, and the first thing he did was to go and inform old G—— M—— of what had just happened.

Such a piece of news of course excited him greatly. This was his only son ; and considering the old gentleman's advanced age, he was extremely active and ardent. He first inquired of the servant what his son had been doing that afternoon ; whether he had had any quarrel on his own account, or interfered in any other : and whether he had been in any suspicious house. The lacquey, who fancied his master in imminent danger, and thought that he ought not to have any reserve in such an emergency, disclosed at once all that he knew of his connection with Manon, and of the expense he had gone to on her account ; the manner in which he had passed the afternoon with her until about nine o'clock, the circumstance of his leaving her, and the outrage he encountered on his return. This was enough to convince him that his son's affair was a love quarrel. Although it was then at least half-past ten at night, he determined at once to call on the lieutenant of police. He begged of him to issue immediate orders to all the detachments that were out on duty, and he himself, taking some men with him, hastened to the street where his son had been stopped : he visited every place where he thought he might have a chance of finding him ; and not

being able to discover the slightest trace of him, he went off to the house of his mistress, to which he thought he probably might by this time have returned.

I was stepping into bed when he arrived. The door of the chamber being closed, I did not hear the knock at the gate, but he rushed into the house, accompanied by two archers of the guard, and after fruitless inquiries of the servants about his son, he resolved to try whether he could get any information from his mistress. He came up to the apartment, still accompanied by the guard. We were just on the point of lying down when he burst open the door, and electrified us by his appearance. "Heavens!" said I to Manon, "it is old G—— M——." I attempted to get possession of my sword; but it was unfortunately entangled in my belt. The archers, who saw my object, advanced to lay hold of me. Stripped to my shirt, I could of course offer no resistance, and they speedily deprived me of all means of defence.

G—— M——, although a good deal embarrassed by the whole scene, soon recognised me; and Manon still more easily. "Is this a dream?" said he, in the most serious tone—"do I not see before me the Chevalier des Grieux and Manon Lescaut?" I was so overcome with shame and disappointment, that I could make him no reply. He appeared for some minutes to be revolving different thoughts in his mind; and as if they had suddenly excited his anger, he

exclaimed, addressing himself to me : "Wretch! I am confident that you have murdered my son!"

I felt indignant at so insulting a charge. "You villain," I exclaimed, "if I had been inclined to kill any of your worthless family, it is with you I should most assuredly have commenced."

"Hold him fast," cried he to the archers; "he must give me some tidings of my son; I shall have him hanged to-morrow, if he does not presently let me know how he has disposed of him."

"You will have me hanged," said I, "will you? Infamous scoundrel! it is for such as you that the gibbet is erected. Know that the blood which flows in my veins is nobler, and purer in every sense than yours. Yes," I added, "I *do* know what has happened to your son; and if you irritate me farther, I will have him strangled before morning; and I promise you the same fate, after he is disposed of."

I was imprudent in acknowledging that I knew where his son was, but excess of anger made me commit this indiscretion. He immediately called in five or six others, who were waiting at the gate, and ordered them to take all the servants into custody. "Ah! ah! Chevalier," said he, in a tone of sardonic raillery,— "so you know where my son is, and you will have him strangled, you say? We will try to set that matter to rights."

I now saw the folly I had committed.

He approached Manon, who was sitting upon the

bed, bathed in a flood of tears. He said something, with the most cruel irony, of the despotic power she wielded over old and young, father and son,—and the good use she made of her power. This superannuated monster of incontinence actually attempted to take liberties with her.

"Take care," exclaimed I, "how you lay a finger upon her!—neither divine nor human law will be able, should your folly arouse it, to shield you from my vengeance!"

He quitted the room, desiring the archers to make us dress as quickly as possible.

I know not what were his intentions at that moment with regard to us: we might perhaps have regained our liberty if we had told him where his son was. As I dressed, I considered whether this would not be the wisest course. But if, on quitting the room, such had been the disposition of his mind, it was very different when he returned. He had first gone to question Manon's servants, who were in the custody of the guard. From those who had been expressly hired for her service by his son, he could learn nothing; but when he found that Marcel had been previously our servant, he determined to extract some information from him, by means of threats.

This lad was faithful, but weak and unsophisticated. The remembrance of what he had done at the Penitentiary for Manon's release, joined to the terror with which G—— M—— now inspired him, so subdued

his mind, that he thought they were about to lead him to the ga'low's, or the wheel. He promised that, if they would spare his life, he would disclose everything he knew. This speech made G—— M—— imagine that there was something more serious in the affair than he had before supposed ; he not only gave Marcel a promise of his life, but a handsome reward in hand for his intended confession.

The booby then told him the leading features of our plot, of which we had made no secret before him, as he was himself to have borne a part in it. True, he knew nothing of the alterations we had made at Paris in our original design ; but he had been informed, before quitting Chaillot, of our projected adventure, and of the part he was to perform. He therefore told him that the object was to make a dupe of his son ; and that Manon was to receive, if she had not already received, ten thousand francs, which, according to our project, would be effectually lost to G—— M——, his heirs and assigns for ever.

Having acquired this information, the old gentleman hastened back in a rage to the apartment. Without uttering a word, he passed into the boudoir, where he easily put his hand upon the money and the jewels. He then accosted us, bursting with rage ; and holding up what he was pleased to call our plunder, he loaded us with the most indignant reproaches. He placed close to Manon's eye the pearl necklace and bracelets. "Do you recognise them ?" said he, ⁱⁿ a tone of

mockery ; it is not, perhaps, the first time you may have seen them. The identical pearls, by my faith ! They were selected by your own exquisite taste ! The poor innocents !” added he ; “they really are most amiable creatures, both one and the other ; but they are perhaps a little too much inclined to roguery.”

I could hardly contain my indignation at this speech. I would have given for one moment's liberty—Heavens ! what would I not have given ? At length, I suppressed my feelings sufficiently to say in a tone of moderation, which was but the refinement of rage : “Put an end, sir, to this insolent mockery ! What do you purpose doing with us ?”

“M. le Chevalier,” he answered, “my object is to see you quietly lodged in the prison of the Châtelet. Tomorrow will bring daylight with it, and we shall then be able to take a clearer view of matters ; and I hope you will at last do me the favour to let me know where my son is.”

It did not require much consideration to feel convinced that our incarceration in Le Châtelet would be a serious calamity. I foresaw all the dangers that would ensue. In spite of my pride, I plainly saw the necessity of bending before my fate, and conciliating my most implacable enemy by submission. I begged of him, in the quietest manner, to listen to me. “I wish to do myself but common justice, sir,” said I to him ; “I admit that my youth has led me into egregious follies ; and that you have had fair reason to

complain : but if you have ever felt the resistless power of love, if you can enter into the sufferings of an unhappy young man, from whom all that he most loves was ravished, you may think me perhaps not so culpable in seeking the gratification of an innocent revenge ; or at least, you may consider me sufficiently punished, by the exposure and degradation I have just now endured. Neither pains nor imprisonment will be requisite to make me tell you where your son now is. He is in perfect safety. It was never my intention to injure him, nor to give you just cause for offence. I am ready to let you know the place where he is safely passing the night, if, in return you will set us at liberty."

The old tiger, far from being softened by my prayer, turned his back upon me, and laughed. A few words escaped him, which showed that he perfectly well knew our whole plan from the commencement. As for his son, the brute said that he would easily find him, since I had not assassinated him. "Conduct them to the Petit-Châtelet," said he to the archers ; "and take especial care that the chevalier does not escape you : he is a scamp that once before escaped from St. Lazare."

He went out, and left me in a condition that you may picture to yourself. "O Heaven !" cried I to myself, "I receive with humble submission all your visitations ; but that a wretched scoundrel should thus have the power to tyrannise over me ! this it is that

plunges me into the depths of despair !” The archers begged that we would not detain them any longer. They had a coach at the door.—“Come, my dear angel,” said I to Manon, as we went down, “come, let us submit to our destiny in all its rigour : it may one day please Heaven to render us more happy.”

We went in the same coach. I supported her in my arms. I had not heard her utter a single word since G——M——’s first appearance : but now, finding herself alone with me, she addressed me in the tenderest manner, and accused herself of being the cause of all my troubles. I assured her that I never could complain, while she continued to love me. “It is not I that have reason to complain,” I added ; “imprisonment for a few months has no terrors for me, and I infinitely prefer Le Châtelet to St. Lazare ; but it is for you, my dearest soul, that my heart bleeds. What a lot for such an angel ! How can you, gracious Heaven ! subject to such rigour the most perfect work of your own hands ? Why are we not both of us born with qualities conformable to our wretched condition ? We are endowed with spirit, with taste, with feeling ; while the vilest of God’s creatures,—brutes, alone worthy of our unhappy fate, are revelling in all the favours of fortune.”

These feelings filled me with grief ; but it was bliss, compared with my prospects for the future. My fear, on account of Manon, knew no bounds. She had already been an inmate of the Magdalen Hospital ;

and even if she had left it by fair means, I knew that a relapse of this nature would be attended with disastrous consequences. I wished to let her know my fears : I was apprehensive of exciting hers. I trembled for her, without daring to put her on her guard against the danger ; and I embraced her tenderly, to satisfy her, at least, of my love, which was almost the only sentiment to which I dared to give expression.—“Manon,” said I, “tell me sincerely, will you ever cease to love me ?”

She answered that it made her unhappy to think that I could doubt it.

“Very well,” replied I, “I do so no longer ; and with this conviction, I may well defy all my enemies. Through the influence of my family, I can ensure my own liberation from the Châtelet ; and my life will be of little use, and of short duration, if I do not succeed in rescuing you.”

We arrived at the prison, where they put us into separate cells. This blow was the less severe, because I was prepared for it. I recommended Manon to the attention of the porter, telling him that I was a person of some distinction, and promising him a considerable recompense. I embraced my dearest mistress before we parted ; I implored her not to distress herself too much, and to fear nothing while I lived. I had money with me : I gave her some ; and I paid the porter out of what remained, the amount of a month's expenses for both of us in advance. This had

an excellent effect, for I found myself placed in an apartment comfortably furnished, and they assured me that Manon was in one equally good.

I immediately set about devising the means of procuring my liberty. There certainly had not been anything actually criminal in my conduct ; and supposing even that our felonious intention was established by the evidence of Marcel, I knew that criminal intentions alone were not punishable. I resolved to write immediately to my father, and beg of him to come himself to Paris. I felt much less humiliation, as I have already said, in being in Le Châtelet than in St. Lazare. Besides, although I preserved all proper respect for the paternal authority, age and experience had considerably lessened my timidity. I wrote, and they made no difficulty in the prison about forwarding my letter ; but it was a trouble I should have spared myself, had I known my father was about to arrive on the following day in Paris.

He had received the letter I had written to him a week before ; it gave him extreme delight ; but, notwithstanding the flattering hopes I had held out of my conversion, he could not implicitly rely on my statements. He determined therefore to satisfy himself of my reformation by the evidence of his own senses, and to regulate his conduct towards me according to his conviction of my sincerity. He arrived the day after my imprisonment.

His first visit was to Tiberge, to whose care I

begged that he would address his answer. He could not learn from him either my present abode or condition : Tiberge merely told him of my principal adventures since I had escaped from St. Lazare. Tiberge spoke warmly of the disposition to virtue which I had evinced at our last interview. He added, that he considered me as having quite got rid of Manon ; but that he was nevertheless surprised at my not having given him any intelligence about myself for a week. My father was not to be duped. He fully comprehended that there was something in the silence of which Tiberge complained, which had escaped my poor friend's penetration ; and he took such pains to find me out, that in two days after his arrival he learned that I was in Le Châtelet.

Before I received this visit, which I little expected so soon, I had the honour of one from the lieutenant-general of police, or, to call things by their right names, I was subjected to an official examination. He upbraided me certainly, but not in any harsh or annoying manner. He told me, in the kindest tone, that he bitterly lamented my bad conduct ; that I had committed a gross indiscretion in making an enemy of such a man as M. G—— M—— ; that in truth it was easy to see that there was in the affair more of imprudence and folly than of malice ; but that still it was the second time I had been brought as a culprit under his cognisance ; and that he had hoped I should

have become more sedate, after the experience of two or three months in St. Lazare.

Delighted at finding that I had a rational judge to deal with, I explained the affair to him in a manner at once so respectful and so moderate, that he seemed exceedingly satisfied with my answers to all the queries he put. He desired me not to abandon myself to grief, and assured me that he felt every disposition to serve me, as well on account of my birth as my inexperience. I ventured to bespeak his attentions in favour of Manon, and I dwelt upon her gentle and excellent disposition. He replied, with a smile, that he had not yet seen her, but that she had been represented to him as a most dangerous person. This expression so excited my sympathy, that I urged a thousand anxious arguments in favour of my poor mistress, and I could not restrain even from shedding tears. He desired them to conduct me back to my chamber. "Love! Love!" cried this grave magistrate as I went out, "thou art never to be reconciled with Discretion!"

I had been occupied with the most melancholy reflections, and was thinking of the conversation I had had with the lieutenant-general of police, when I heard my door open. It was my father. Although I ought to have been half prepared for seeing him, and had reason to expect his arrival within a day or two, yet I was so thunderstruck, that I could willingly have sunk into the earth, if it had been open at my feet. I

embraced him in the greatest possible state of confusion. He took a seat, without either of us having uttered a word.

As I remained standing, with my head uncovered, and my eyes cast on the ground, "Be seated, sir," said he in a solemn voice; "be seated. I have to thank the notoriety of your debaucheries for learning the place of your abode. It is the privilege of such fame as yours, that it cannot lie concealed. You are acquiring celebrity by an unerring path. Doubtless it will lead you to the Grève,* and you will then have the unfading glory of being held up to the admiration of the world."

I made no reply. He continued: "What an unhappy lot is that of a father, who, having tenderly loved a child, and strained every nerve to bring him up a virtuous and respectable man, finds him turn out in the end a worthless profligate, who dishonours him. To an ordinary reverse of fortune one may be reconciled; time softens the affliction, and even the indulgence of sorrow itself is not unavailing; but what remedy is there for an evil that is perpetually augmenting, such as the profligacy of a vicious son, who has deserted every principle of honour, and is ever plunging from deep, into deeper vice? You are silent,"

* "Who has e'er been at Paris must needs know the Grève,
The fatal retreat of th' unfortunate brave,
Where honour and justice most oddly contribute,
To ease heroes' pains by the halter and gibbet."

added he, "look at this counterfeit modesty, this hypocritical air of gentleness!—might he not pass for the most respectable member of his family?"

Although I could not but feel that I deserved, in some degree, these reproaches, yet he appeared to me to carry them beyond all reason. I thought I might be permitted to explain my feelings.

"I assure you, Sir," said I to him, "that the modesty which you ridicule is by no means affected ; it is the natural feeling of a son who entertains sincere respect for his father, and above all, a father irritated as you justly are by his faults. Neither have I, Sir, the slightest wish to pass for the most respectable member of my family. I know that I have merited your reproaches, but I conjure you to temper them with mercy, and not to look upon me as the most infamous of mankind. I do not deserve such harsh names. It is love, you know it, that has caused all my errors. Fatal passion ! Have you yourself never felt its force ? Is it possible that you, with the same blood in your veins that flows in mine, should have passed through life unscathed by the same excitements ? Love has rendered me perhaps foolishly tender,—too easily excited,—too impassioned,—too faithful, and probably too indulgent to the desires and caprices, or, if you will, the faults of an adored mistress. These are my crimes ; are they such as to reflect dishonour upon you ? Come, my dear father," said I tenderly, "show some pity for a son, who has never ceased to

feel respect and affection for you,—who has not renounced, as you say, all feelings of honour and of duty, and who is himself a thousand times more an object of pity than you imagine.” I could not help shedding a tear as I concluded this appeal.

A father’s heart is a *chef-d’œuvre* of creation. There Nature rules undisturbed, and regulates at will its most secret springs. He was a man of high feeling and good taste, and was so sensibly affected by the turn I had given to my defence, that he could no longer hide from me the change I had wrought.

“Come to me, my poor chevalier,” said he; “come and embrace me. I do pity you!”

I embraced him: he clasped me in such a manner, that I guessed what was passing in his heart.

“But how are we,” said he, “to extricate you from this place? Explain to me the real situation of your affairs.”

As there really was not anything in my conduct so grossly improper as to reflect dishonour upon me: at least, in comparison with the conduct of other young men of a certain station in the world; and as a mistress is not considered a disgrace, any more than a little dexterity in drawing some advantage from play, I gave my father a candid detail of the life I had been leading. As I recounted each transgression, I took care to cite some illustrious example in my justification, in order to palliate my own faults.

“I lived,” said I, “with a mistress without the

solemnity of marriage. The Duke of — keeps two before the eyes of all Paris. M—— D—— has had one now for ten years, and loves her with a fidelity which he has never shown to his wife. Two-thirds of the men of fashion in Paris keep mistresses.⁽¹⁾

"I certainly have on one or two occasions cheated at play. Well, the Marquis of — and the Count — have no other source of revenue. The Prince of — and the Duke of — are at the head of a gang of the same industrious order. As for the designs I had upon the pockets of the two G—— M——'s, I might just as easily have proved that I had abundant models for that also ; but I had too much pride to plead guilty to this charge, and rest on the justification of example ; so that I begged of my father to ascribe my weakness on this occasion to the violence of the two passions which agitated me—Revenge and Love.

He asked me whether I could suggest any means of obtaining my liberty, and in such a way as to avoid publicity as much as possible. I told him of the kind feelings which the lieutenant-general of police had expressed towards me. "If you encounter any obstacles," said I, "they will be offered only by the two G—— M——'s ; so that I think it would be advisable to call upon them." He promised to do so.

I did not dare ask him to solicit Manon's liberation ; this was not from want of courage, but from the apprehension of exasperating him by such a pro-

position, and perhaps driving him to form some design fatal to the future happiness of us both. It remains to this hour a problem whether this fear on my part was not the immediate cause of all my most terrible misfortunes, by preventing me from ascertaining my father's disposition, and endeavouring to inspire him with favourable feelings towards my poor mistress : I might have perhaps once more succeeded in exciting his commiseration ; I might have put him on his guard against the impression which he was sure of receiving from a visit to old G—— M——. But how can I tell what the consequences would have been ! My unhappy fate would have most probably counteracted all my efforts ; but it would have been a consolation to have had nothing else but that, and the cruelty of my enemies, to blame for my afflictions.

On quitting me, my father went to pay a visit to M. G—— M——. He found him with his son, whom the guardsman had safely restored to liberty. I never learned the particulars of their conversation ; but I could easily infer them from the disastrous results. They went together (the two old gentlemen) to the lieutenant-general of police, from whom they requested one favour each : the first was to have me at once liberated from Le Châtelet : the second to condemn Manon to perpetual imprisonment, or to transport her for life to America. They happened, at that very period, to be sending out a number of convicts to the Mississippi. The lieutenant-general

promised to have her embarked on board the first vessel that sailed.

M. G—— M—— and my father came together to bring me the news of my liberation. M. G—— M—— said something civil with reference to what had passed ; and having congratulated me upon my happiness in having such a father, he exhorted me to profit henceforward by his instruction and example. My father desired me to express my sorrow for the injustice I had even contemplated against his family, and my gratitude for his having assisted in procuring my liberation.

We all left the prison together, without the mention of Manon's name. I dared not in their presence speak of her to the turnkeys. Alas ! all my entreaties in her favour would have been useless. The cruel sentence upon Manon had arrived at the same time as the warrant for my discharge. The unfortunate girl was conducted in an hour after to the hospital, to be there classed with some other wretched women, who had been condemned to the same punishment. ⁵¹

My father having forced me to accompany him to the house where he was residing, it was near six o'clock before I had an opportunity of escaping his vigilance. In returning to Le Châtelet, my only wish was to convey some refreshments to Manon, and to recommend her to the attention of the porter ; for I had no hope of being permitted to see her ; nor

had I, as yet, had time to reflect on the best means of rescuing her.

I asked for the porter. I had won his heart, as much by my liberality to him, as by the mildness of my manner ; so that, having a disposition to serve me, he spoke of Manon's sentence as a calamity which he sincerely regretted, since it was calculated to mortify me. I was at first unable to comprehend his meaning. We conversed for some minutes without my understanding him. At length, perceiving that an explanation was necessary, he gave me such an one, as on a former occasion I wanted courage to relate to you, and which, even now, makes my blood curdle in my veins to remember.

Never did apoplexy produce on mortal a more sudden or terrific effect than did the announcement of Manon's sentence upon me. I fell prostrate, with so intense a palpitation of the heart, that as I swooned I thought that death itself was come upon me. This idea continued even after I had been restored to my senses. I gazed around me upon every part of the room, then upon my own paralysed limbs, doubting, in my delirium, whether I still bore about me the attributes of a living man. It is quite certain that, in obedience to the desire I felt of terminating my sufferings, even by my own hand, nothing could have been to me more welcome than death at that moment of anguish and despair. Religion itself could depict nothing more insupportable after death than the

racking agony with which I was then convulsed. Yet, by a miracle, only within the power of omnipotent love, I soon regained strength enough to express my gratitude to Heaven for restoring me to sense and reason. My death could have only been a relief and blessing to myself; whereas Manon had occasion for my prolonged existence, in order to deliver her,—to succour her,—to avenge her wrongs: I swore to devote that existence unremittingly to these objects.

The porter gave me every assistance that I could have expected at the hands of my oldest friend; I accepted his services with the liveliest gratitude. "Alas!" said I to him, "you then are affected by my sufferings! The whole world abandons me; my own father proves one of the very cruellest of my persecutors; no person feels pity for me! You alone, in this abode of suffering and shame,—you alone exhibit compassion for the most wretched of mankind!" He advised me not to appear in the street until I had recovered a little from my affliction. "Do not stop me," said I, as I went out; "we shall meet again sooner than you imagine: get ready your darkest dungeon, for I shall shortly become its tenant."

In fact my first idea was nothing less than to make away with the two G—— M——'s, and the lieutenant-general of police; and then to attack the hospital, sword in hand, assisted by all whom I could enlist in my cause. Even my father's life was hardly respected, so just appeared my feelings of vengeance;

that contributes to Manon's suffering. It is matter how sacred or how much beloved before it is destroyed. For when I father came here in prison a father's heart was made of. He would not hesitate to kill him because he spoke in Manon's name to the executioners.

for the porter had informed me that he and G—— M—— were jointly the authors of my ruin.

But when I had advanced some paces into the street, and the fresh air had cooled my excitement, I gradually viewed matters in a more rational mood. The death of our enemies could be of little use to Manon ; and the obvious effect of such violence would be to deprive me of all other chance of serving her. Besides, could I ever bring myself to be a cowardly assassin ? By what other means could I accomplish my revenge ? I set all my ingenuity at work to procure the deliverance of Manon, leaving everything else to be considered hereafter when I had succeeded in this first and paramount object.

I had very little money left ; money, however, was an indispensable basis for all my operations. I only knew three persons from whom I had any right to ask any pecuniary assistance,—M. de T——, Tiberge, and my father. There appeared little chance of obtaining any from the two latter, and I was really ashamed again to importune M. de T——. But it is not in desperate emergencies that one stands upon points of ceremony. I went first to the seminary of St. Sulpice, without considering whether I should be recognised. I asked for Tiberge. His first words showed me that he knew nothing of my latest adventure : this made me change the design I had originally formed of appealing at once to his compassion. I spoke generally of the pleasure it had given me to

Violence and murder are not judged evil in this action. They are only disregarded when they appear to become independent to Manon.

see my father again ; and I then begged of him to lend me some money, under the pretext of being anxious before I left Paris to pay a few little debts, which I wished to keep secret. He handed me his purse, without a single remark. I took twenty or twenty-five pounds, which it contained. I offered him my note of hand, but he was too generous to accept it.

I then went to M. de T—— : I had no reserve with him. I plainly told him my misfortunes and distress : he already knew everything, and had informed himself even of the most trifling circumstance, on account of the interest he naturally took in young G—— M——'s adventure. He however listened to me, and seemed sincerely to lament what had occurred. When I consulted him as to the best means of rescuing Manon, he answered that he saw such little ground for hope, that without some extraordinary interposition of Providence, it would be folly to expect relief ; that he had paid a visit expressly to the hospital since Manon had been transferred from the Châtelet, but that he could not even obtain permission to see her, as the lieutenant-general of police had given the strictest orders to the contrary ; and that, to complete the catastrophe, the unfortunate train of convicts, in which she was to be included, was to take its departure from Paris the next day but one.

I was so confounded by what he said, that if he had

gone on speaking for another hour, I should not have interrupted him. He continued to tell me, that the reason of his not calling to see me at the Châtelet was, that he hoped to be of more use by appearing to be unknown to me ; that for the last few hours, since I had been set at liberty, he had in vain looked for me, in order to suggest the only plan through which he could see a hope of averting Manon's fate. He told me it was dangerous counsel to give, and implored me never to mention the part he took in it ; it was to find some enterprising fellows, gallant enough to attack Manon's guard on getting outside the barrière. Nor did he wait for me to urge a plea of poverty. " Here is fifty pounds," he said, presenting me his purse ; " it may be of use to you ; you can repay me when you are in better circumstances." He added, that if the fear of losing his character did not prevent him from embarking in such an enterprise, he would have willingly put his sword and his life at my service.

This unlooked-for generosity affected me to tears. I expressed my gratitude with as much warmth as my depressed spirits left at my command. I asked him if there were nothing to be expected from interceding with the lieutenant-general of police : he said that he had considered that point ; but that he looked upon it as a hopeless attempt, because a favour of that nature was never accorded without some strong motive, and he did not see what in-

ducement could be held out for engaging the intercession of any person of power on her behalf ; that if any hope could possibly be entertained upon the point, it must be by working a change in the feelings of old G—— M—— and my father, and by prevailing on them to solicit from the lieutenant-general of police the revocation of Manon's sentence. He offered to do everything in his power to gain over the younger G—— M——, although he fancied a coldness in that gentleman's manner towards him, probably from some suspicions he might entertain of his being concerned in the late affair ; and he entreated me to lose no opportunity of affecting the desired change in my father's mind.

This was no easy undertaking for me ; not only on account of the difficulty I should naturally have in overcoming his opinion, but for another reason which made me fear even to approach him ; I had quitted his lodgings contrary to his express orders, and was resolved, since I had learned the sad fate of my poor Manon, never again to return thither. I was not without apprehension, indeed, of his now retaining me against my will, and perhaps taking me at once back with him into the country. My elder brother had formerly had recourse to this violent measure. True, I was now somewhat older ; but age is a feeble argument against force. I hit upon a mode, however, of avoiding this danger, which was to get him by contrivance to some public place, and there announce

myself to him under an assumed name : I immediately resolved on this method. M. de T—— went to G—— M——’s, and I to the Luxembourg, whence I sent my father word that a gentleman waited there to speak with him. I hardly thought he would come, as the night was advancing. He, however, soon made his appearance, followed by a servant : I begged of him to choose a walk where we could be alone. We walked at least a hundred paces without speaking. He doubtless imagined that so much precaution could not be taken without some important object. He waited for my opening speech, and I was meditating how to commence it.

At length I began.

“Sir,” said I, trembling, “you are a good and affectionate parent ; you have loaded me with favours, and have forgiven me an infinite number of faults ; I also in my turn call Heaven to witness the sincere, and tender, and respectful sentiments, I entertain towards you. But it does seem to me, that your inexorable severity——”

“Well, Sir, my severity !” interrupted my father, who no doubt found my hesitation little suited to his impatience.

“Ah, Sir,” I replied, “it does seem to me that your severity is excessive in the penalty you inflict upon the unfortunate Manon. You have taken only M. G—— M——’s report of her. His hatred has made him represent her to you in the most odious

colours : you have formed a frightful idea of her. She is, on the contrary, the mildest and most amiable of living creatures ; would that Heaven had but inspired you at any one moment with the desire of seeing her ! I am convinced that you would be not less sensible of her perfections than your unhappy son. You would then have been her advocate ; you would have abhorred the foul artifices of G—— M—— ; you would have had pity on both her and me. Alas ; I am persuaded of it ; your heart is not insensible : it must ere now have melted with compassion."

He interrupted me again, perceiving that I spoke with a warmth which would not allow me to finish very briefly. He begged to know with what request I intended to wind up so fervent an harangue.

"To ask my life at your hands," said I, "which I never can retain if Manon once embark for America."

"No ! no !" replied he, in the severest tone ; "I would rather see you lifeless than infamous and depraved."

"We have gone far enough then," said I, catching hold of his arm, "take from me, in common mercy, my life ! weary and odious and insupportable as it henceforward must be ; for in the state of despair into which you now plunge me, death would be the greatest favour you could bestow,—a favour worthy of a father's hand."

"I should only give you what you deserve," replied

he ; " I know fathers who would not have shown as much patience as I have, but would themselves have executed speedy justice ; but it is my foolish forbearance that has been your ruin."

I threw myself at his feet : " Ah ! " exclaimed I, " if you have still any remains of mercy, do not harden your heart against my distress and sorrow. Remember that I am your child ! Alas ? think of my poor mother ! you loved her tenderly ! would you have suffered her to be torn from your arms ! You would have defended her to the death ! May not the same feeling then be pardoned in others ? Can persons become barbarous and cruel, after having themselves experienced the softening influence of tenderness and grief ? "

" Breathe not again the sacred name of your mother," he exclaimed, in a voice of thunder ; " the very allusion to her memory rouses my indignation. Had she lived to witness the unredeemed profligacy of your life, it would have brought her in pain and sorrow to the grave. Let us put an end to this discussion," he added ; " it distresses me, and makes not the slightest change in my determination : I am going back to my lodgings, and I desire you to follow me."

The cool and resolute tone in which he uttered this command, convinced me that he was inexorable. I stepped some paces aside, for fear he should think fit to lay hands upon me.

"Do not increase my misery and despair," said I to him, "by forcing me to disobey you. It is impossible for me to follow you ; and equally so that I should continue to live, after the unkind treatment I have experienced from you. I therefore bid you an eternal adieu. When you know that I am dead, as I shall soon be, the paternal affection which you once entertained for me may be perhaps revived."

As I was about to turn away from him : "You refuse then to follow me," cried he, in a tone of excessive anger. "Go ! go on to your ruin. Adieu ! ungrateful and disobedient boy."

"Adieu !" exclaimed I to him, in a burst of grief.
"adieu, cruel and unnatural father !"

I left the Luxembourg, and rushed like a madman through the streets to M. de T——'s house. I raised my hands and eyes as I went along, invoking the Almighty Powers : "O Heaven," cried I, "will you not prove more merciful than man ! The only hope that remains to me is from above !"

M. de T—— had not yet returned home ; but he arrived before many minutes had elapsed. His negotiations had been as unsuccessful as my own. He told me so with the most sorrowful countenance. Young G—— M——, although less irritated than his father against Manon and me, would not undertake to petition in our favour. He was, in great measure, deterred by the fear which he himself had of the vindictive old lecher, who had already vented his anger

*and his father has refused to communicate Manon
to the court, and she is now in the hands of the
law.*

against him for his design of forming a connection with Manon.

There only remained to me, therefore, the violent measures which M. de T—— had suggested. I now confined all my hopes to them. They were, ~~question-~~^{unquestion-}
~~less~~, most uncertain; but they held out to me, at least, ^{possibly} a substantial consolation, in the certainty of meeting death in the attempt, if unsuccessful. I left him begging that he would offer up his best wishes for my triumph; and I thought only of finding some companions, to whom I might communicate a portion of my own courage and determination.

The first that occurred to me was the same guardsman whom I had employed to arrest G—— M——. I had intended indeed to pass the night at his rooms, not having had a moment of leisure during the afternoon to procure myself a lodging. I found him alone. He was glad to see me out of the Châtelet. He made me an offer of his services. I explained to him in what way he might now do me the greatest kindness. He had good sense enough to perceive all the difficulties; but he was also generous enough to undertake to surmount them.

We spent part of the night in considering how the plot was to be executed. He spoke of the three soldiers whom he had made use of on the last occasion, as men whose courage had been proved. M. de T—— had told me the exact number of archers that would escort Manon; they were but six. Five strong

and determined men could not fail to strike terror into these fellows, who would never think of defending themselves bravely, when they were to be allowed the alternative of avoiding danger by surrendering; and of that they would no doubt avail themselves. ⁶⁹As I was not without money, the guardsman advised me to spare no pains or expense to ensure success. "We must be mounted," he said, "and each man must have his carbine and pistols; I will take care to prepare everything requisite by to-morrow. We shall want three new suits of regimentals for the soldiers, who dare not appear in an affray of this kind in the uniform of their regiment. I handed him the hundred pistoles which I had got from M. de T——: it was all expended the next morning, to the very last sou. I inspected the three soldiers; I animated them with the most liberal promises; and to confirm their confidence in me, I began by making each man a present of ten pistoles.

The momentous day having arrived, I sent one of them at an early hour to the hospital, to ascertain the exact time when the police were to start with their prisoners. Although I merely took this precaution from my excessive anxiety, it turned out to have been a prudent step. I had formed my plans upon false information, which I had received as to their destination; and believing that it was at Rochelle this unhappy group was to embark, all my trouble would have been thrown away in waiting for them on the

Orleans road. However, I learned, by the soldier's report, that they would go out towards Rouen, and that it was from Havre-de Grace they were to sail for America.

We at once went to the gate of St. Honoré, taking care to go by different streets. We assembled at the end of the faubourg. Our horses were fresh. In a little time we observed before us the six archers and the two wretched caravans, which you saw at Passy two years ago. The sight alone deprived me of my strength and senses. "O Fate ! said I to myself, "cruel Fate ! grant me now either death or victory."

We hastily consulted as to the mode of making the attack. The cavalcade was only four hundred paces in advance, and we might intercept them by cutting across a small field, round which the highroad led. The guardsman was for this course, in order to fall suddenly upon them while unprepared. I approved of the plan, and was the first to spur my horse forward—but fate once again relentlessly blasted all my hopes.

The escort, seeing five horsemen riding towards them, inferred that it was for the purpose of attacking them. They put themselves in a position of defence, preparing their bayonets and guns with an air of resolution.

This demonstration, which in the guardsman and myself only inspired fresh courage, had a very different effect upon our three cowardly companions. They stopped simultaneously, and having muttered to each

other some words which I could not hear, they turned their horses' heads, threw the bridges on their necks, and galloped back towards Paris.

"Good Heavens!" said the guardsman, who appeared as much annoyed as I was by this infamous desertion, "what is to be done? we are but two now."

From rage and consternation I had lost all power of speech. I doubted whether my first revenge should not be in pursuing the cowards who had abandoned me. I saw them flying, and looked in the other direction at the escort: if it had been possible to divide myself, I should at once have fallen upon both these objects of my fury; I should have destroyed all at the same moment.

The guardsman, who saw my irresolution by my wandering gaze, begged of me to hear his advice. "Being but two," he said, "it would be madness to attack six men as well armed as ourselves, and who seem determined to receive us firmly. Let us return to Paris, and endeavour to succeed better in the choice of our comrades. The police cannot make very rapid progress with two heavy vans; we may overtake them to-morrow without difficulty."

I reflected a moment on this suggestion; but seeing nothing around me but despair, I took a final and indeed desperate resolution: this was to thank my companion for his services, and, far from attacking the police, to go up with submission and implore them to receive me among them, that I might accompany

Manon to Havre-de-Grace, and afterwards, if possible, cross the Atlantic with her. "The whole world is either persecuting or betraying me," said I to the guardsman ; "I have no longer the power of interesting any one in my favour ; I expect nothing more either from Fortune or the friendship of man ; my misery is at its height ; it only remains for me to submit, so that I close my eyes henceforward against every gleam of hope. May Heaven," I continued, "reward you for your generosity ! Adieu ! I shall go and aid my wretched destiny in filling up the measure of my ruin." He in vain endeavoured to persuade me to return with him to Paris. I entreated him to leave me at once, lest the police should still suspect us of an intention to attack them.

Riding towards the cortège at a slow pace, and with a sorrowful countenance, the guards could hardly see anything very terrific in my approach. They seemed, however, to expect an attack. "Be persuaded, gentlemen," said I to them, "that I come not to wage war, but rather to ask favours." I then begged of them to continue their progress without any distrust, and as we went along I made my solicitations.

They consulted together to ascertain in what way they should entertain my request. The chief of them spoke for the rest. He said that the orders they had received to watch the prisoners vigilantly were of the strictest kind ; that, however, I seemed so interesting
V a young man, that they might be induced to relax a

little in their duty ; but that I must know, of course, that this would cost me something. I had about sixteen pistoles left, and candidly told them what my purse contained. "Well," said the gendarme, "we will act generously. It shall only cost you a crown an hour for conversing with any of our girls that you may prefer,—that is the ordinary price in Paris."

I said not a word of Manon, because I did not wish to let them know of my passion. They at first supposed it was merely a boyish whim, that made me think of amusing myself with these creatures : but when they discovered that I was in love, they increased their demands in such a way, that my purse was completely empty on leaving Mantes, where we had slept the night before our arrival at Passy.

Shall I describe to you my heart-rending interviews with Manon during this journey, and what my sensations were when I obtained from the guards permission to approach her caravan? Oh ! language never can adequately express the sentiments of the heart ; but picture to yourself my poor mistress, with a chain round her waist, seated upon a handful of straw, her head resting languidly against the panel of the carriage, her face pale and bathed with tears, which forced a passage between her eyelids, although she kept them continually closed. She had not even the curiosity to open her eyes on hearing the bustle of the guards when they expected our attack. Her clothes were soiled

and in disorder ; her delicate hands exposed to the rough air ; in fine, her whole angelic form, that face, lovely enough to carry back the world to idolatry, presented a spectacle of distress and anguish utterly indescribable.

I spent some moments gazing at her as I rode alongside the carriage. I had so lost my self-possession, that I was several times on the point of falling from my horse. My sighs and frequent exclamations at length attracted her attention. She looked at and recognised me, and I remarked that on the first impulse, she unconsciously tried to leap from the carriage towards me, but being checked by her chain, she fell into her former attitude.

I begged of the guards to stop one moment for the sake of mercy ; they consented for the sake of avarice. I dismounted to go and sit near her. She was so languid and feeble that she was for some time without the power of speech, and could not raise her hands ; I bathed them with my tears ; and being myself unable to utter a word, we formed together as deplorable a picture of distress as could well be seen. When at length we were able to speak, our conversation was not less sorrowful. Manon said little : shame and grief appeared to have altered the character of her voice ; its tone was feeble and tremulous.

She thanked me for not having forgotten her, and for the comfort I gave her in allowing her to see me once more, and bid me a last fare-

well. But when I assured her that no power on earth could ever separate me from her, and that I was resolved to follow her to the extremity of the world, —to watch over her, —to guard her, —and inseparably to unite my wretched destiny with hers, the poor girl gave way to such feelings of tenderness and grief, that I almost dreaded danger to her life from the violence of her emotion; the agitation of her whole soul seemed intensely concentrated in her eyes; she fixed them steadfastly upon me. She more than once opened her lips without the power of giving utterance to her thoughts. I could, however, catch some expressions that dropped from her, of admiration and wonder at my excessive love, —of doubt that she could have been fortunate enough to inspire me with a passion so perfect, —of earnest entreaty that I would abandon my intention of following her, and seek elsewhere a lot more worthy of me, and which, she said, I could never hope to find with her.

In spite of the cruellest inflictions of Fate, I derived comfort from her looks, and from the conviction that I now possessed her undivided affection. I had in truth lost all that other men value; but I was the possessor of Manon's heart, the only possession that I prized. Whether in Europe or in America, of what moment to me was the place of my abode, provided I might live happy in the society of my mistress? Is not the Universe the residence of two fond and faithful lovers? Does not each find in the

✓ other father, mother, friends, relations, riches, felicity?

94
If anything caused me uneasiness, it was the fear of seeing Manon exposed to want. I fancied myself already with her in a barbarous country, inhabited by savages. "I am quite certain," said I, "there will be none there more cruel than G—— M—— and my father. They will, at least, allow us to live in peace. If the accounts we read of savages be true, they obey the laws of nature; they neither know the mean repacity of avarice, nor the false and fantastic notions of honour, which have raised me up an enemy in my own father. They will not harass and persecute two lovers, when they see us adopt their own simple habits." I was therefore at ease upon that point.

But I formed no romantic ideas as to the ordinary wants of life. I had too often found that there were necessities which could not be dispensed with, particularly by a young and delicate woman. I was in despair at having so fruitlessly emptied my purse, and the little money that now remained was about being forced from me by the rascally imposition of the gendarmes. I imagined that a very trifling sum would suffice for our support for some time in America, where money was scarce, and might also enable me to form some undertaking there for our permanent establishment.

This idea made me resolve on writing to Tiberge,

whom I had ever found ready to hold out the generous hand of friendship. I wrote from the first town we passed through. I only alluded to the destitute condition in which I foresaw that I should find myself on arriving at Havre-de-Grace, to which place I acknowledged that I was accompanying Manon. I asked him for only fifty pistoles. "You can remit it to me," said I to him, "through the hands of the post-master. You must perceive that it is the last time I can by any possibility trespass on your friendly kindness; and my poor unhappy mistress being about to be exiled from her country for ever, I cannot let her depart without supplying her with some few comforts, to soften the sufferings of her lot, as well as to assuage my own sorrows."

The gendarmes became so rapacious when they saw the violence of my passion, continually increasing their demands for the slightest favours, that they soon left me penniless. Love did not permit me to put any bounds to my liberality. At Manon's side I was not master of myself; and it was no longer by the hour that time was measured; rather by the duration of whole days. At length my funds being completely exhausted, I found myself exposed to the brutal caprice of these six wretches, who treated me with intolerable rudeness—you yourself witnessed it at Passy. My meeting with you was a momentary relaxation accorded me by Fate. Your compassion at the sight of my suffering was my only recommendation to your

generous nature. The assistance which you so liberally extended, enabled me to reach Havre, and the guards kept their promise more faithfully than I had ventured to hope.

We arrived at Havre. I went to the post-office : Tiberge had not yet had time to answer my letter. I ascertained the earliest day I might reckon upon his answer : it could not possibly arrive for two days longer ; and by an extraordinary fatality, our vessel was to sail on the very morning of the day when the letter might be expected. I cannot give you an idea of my despair. "Alas!" cried I, "even amongst the unfortunate, I am to be ever the most wretched!"

Manon replied : "Alas! does a life so thoroughly miserable deserve the care we bestow on ours? Let us die at Harve, dearest Chevalier! Let death at once put an end to our afflictions! Shall we persevere, and drag on this hopeless existence in an unknown land, where we shall, no doubt, have to encounter the most horrible pains, since it has been their object to punish me by exile? Let us die," she repeated, "or do at least in mercy rid me of life, and then you can seek another lot in the arms of some happier lover."

"No, no, Manon," said I, "it is but too enviable a lot, in my estimation, to be allowed to share your misfortunes."

Her observations made me tremble. I saw that she was overpowered by her afflictions. I tried to

assume a more tranquil air, in order to dissipate such melancholy thoughts of death and despair. I resolved to adopt the same course in future ; and I learned by the results, that nothing is more calculated to inspire a woman with courage than the demonstration of intrepidity in the man she loves.

When I lost all hope of receiving the expected assistance from Tiberge, I sold my horse ; the money it brought, joined to what remained of your generous gift, amounted to the small sum of forty pistoles ; I expended eight in the purchase of some necessary articles for Manon ; and I put the remainder by, as the capital upon which we were to rest our hopes and raise our fortunes in America. I had no difficulty in getting admitted on board the vessel. They were at the time looking for young men as voluntary emigrants to the colony. The passage and provisions were supplied gratis. I left a letter for Tiberge, which was to go by the post next morning to Paris. It was no doubt written in a tone calculated to affect him deeply, since it induced him to form a resolution, which could only be carried into execution by the tenderest and most generous sympathy for his unhappy friend.

We set sail ; the wind continued favourable during the entire passage. I obtained from the captain's kindness a separate cabin for the use of Manon and myself. He was so good as to distinguish us from the herd of our miserable associates. I took an

opportunity, on the second day, of conciliating his attentions, by telling him part of our unfortunate history. I did not feel that I was guilty of any very culpable falsehood in saying that I was the husband of Manon. He appeared to believe it, and promised me his protection; and indeed we experienced, during the whole passage, the most flattering evidences of his sincerity. He took care that our table was comfortably provided; and his attentions procured us the marked respect of our companions in misery. The unwearied object of my solicitude was to save Manon from every inconvenience. She felt this, and her gratitude, together with a lively sense of the singular position in which I had placed myself solely for her sake, rendered the dear creature so tender and impassioned, so attentive also to my most trifling wants, that it was between us a continual emulation of attentions and of love. I felt no regret at quitting Europe; on the contrary, the nearer we approached America, the more did I feel my heart expand and become tranquil. If I had not felt a dread of our perhaps wanting by-and-by the absolute necessities of life, I should have been grateful to Fate for having at length given so favourable a turn to our affairs.



After a passage of two months, we at length reached the banks of the desired river. The country offered at first sight nothing agreeable. We saw only sterile and uninhabited plains, covered with rushes, and some trees rooted up by the wind. No trace

either of men or animals. However, the captain having discharged some pieces of artillery, we presently observed a group of the inhabitants of New Orleans, who approached us with evident signs of joy. We had not perceived the town : it is concealed upon the side on which we approached it by a hill. We were received as persons dropt from the clouds.

The poor inhabitants hastened to put a thousand questions to us upon the state of France, and of the different provinces in which they were born. They embraced us as brothers, and as beloved companions, who had come to share their pains and their solitude. We turned towards the town with them ; but we were astonished to perceive, as we advanced, that what we had hitherto heard spoken of as a respectable town, was nothing more than a collection of miserable huts. They were inhabited by five or six hundred persons. The governor's house was a little distinguished from the rest by its height and its position. It was surrounded by some earthen ramparts, and a deep ditch.

We were first presented to him. He continued for some time in conversation with the captain ; and then advancing towards us, he looked attentively at the women one after another ; there were thirty of them, for another troop of convicts had joined us at Havre. After having thus inspected them, he sent for several young men of the colony who were desirous to marry. He assigned the handsomest women to the principal

as there, and the remainder were disposed of by lot. He then, not without some delay, but having ordered the others to depart, he made us remain. "I learn from the captain," said he, "that you are married, and are conversant in your conduct on the passage that you are both persons of merit and of education. I have nothing to do with the cause of your misfortune; but if it be true that you are in concert with the world and society as your appearance would indicate, I shall spare no pains to relieve the severity of your lot, and you may as your part contribute towards meeting this wage and about which has disappeared to me."

I replied in the manner which I thought best calculated to confirm the opinion he had formed of us. He gave orders to have a habitation prepared for us in the town, and detained us to supper. I was really surprised to find so much politeness in a gentleman of transitory pursuits. In the presence of others he abstained from speaking about our past adventures. The conversation was general; and in spite of our degradation, Manon and I exerted ourselves to make it agreeable and agreeable.

At night we were conducted to the lodging prepared for us. We found a wretched hotel composed of planks and mud, containing three rooms on the ground, and a loft overhead. He had sent there six chairs, and some few necessities of life.

Manon appeared frightened by the first view of this

melancholy dwelling. It was on my account, much more than upon her own, that she distressed herself. When we were left to ourselves, she sat down and wept bitterly. I attempted at first to console her ; but when she enabled me to understand that it was for my sake she deplored our privations, and that in our common affliction she only considered me as the sufferer, I put on an air of resolution, and even of content, sufficient to encourage her.

"What is there in my lot to lament ?" said I ; "I possess all that I have ever desired. You love me, Manon, do you not ? What happiness beyond this have I ever longed for ? Let us leave to Providence the direction of our destiny ; it, by no means, appears to me so desperate. The governor is civil and obliging ; he has already given us marks of his consideration ; he will not allow us to want for necessaries. As to our rude hut and the squalidness of our furniture, you might have noticed that there are few persons in the colony better lodged or more comfortably furnished than we are : and then you are an admirable chemist," added I, embracing her ; "you transform everything into gold."

"In that case," she answered, "you shall be the richest man in the universe ; for as there never was love surpassing yours, so it is impossible for man to be loved more tenderly than you are by me. I well know," she continued, "that I have never merited the almost incredible fidelity and attachment which

you have shown for me. I have only caused you annoyances, which nothing but excessive fondness could have induced you to pardon. I have been thoughtless and volatile ; and even while loving you, as I have always done to distraction, I was never free from a consciousness of ingratitude. But you cannot believe how much my nature is altered ; those tears which you have so frequently seen me shed since quitting the French shore, have not been caused by my own misfortunes. Since you began to share them with me, I have been a stranger to selfishness : I only wept from tenderness and compassion for you. I am inconsolable at the thought of having given you one instant's pain during my past life. I never cease upbraiding myself with my former inconstancy, and wondering at the sacrifices which love has induced you to make for a miserable and unworthy wretch, who could not, with the last drop of her blood, compensate for half the torments she has caused you."

Her grief, the language, and the tone in which she expressed herself, made such an impression, that I felt my heart ready to break within me. "Take care," said I to her, "take care, dear Manon ; I have not strength to endure such exciting marks of your affection ; I am little accustomed to the rapturous sensations which you now kindle in my heart. O Heaven !" cried I, "I have now nothing further to ask of you. I am sure of Manon's love. That has been alone wanting to complete my happiness ; I can

now never cease to be happy : my felicity is well secured."

"It is indeed," she replied, "if it depends upon me, and I well know where I can be ever certain of finding my own happiness centred."

With these ideas, capable of turning my hut into a palace worthy of earth's proudest monarch, I lay down to rest. America appeared to my view the true land of milk and honey, the abode of contentment and delight. "People should come to New Orleans," I often said to Manon, "who wish to enjoy the real rapture of love ! It is here that love is divested of all selfishness, all jealousy, all inconstancy. Our countrymen come here in search of gold ; they little think that we have discovered treasures of inestimably greater value."

We carefully cultivated the governor's friendship. He bestowed upon me, a few weeks after our arrival, a small appointment which became vacant in the fort. Although not one of any distinction, I gratefully accepted it as a gift of Providence, as it enabled me to live independantly of others' aid. I took a servant for myself, and a woman for Manon. Our little establishment became settled : nothing could surpass the regularity of my conduct, or that of Manon ; we lost no opportunity of serving or doing an act of kindness to our neighbours. This friendly disposition, and the mildness of our manners, secured us the confidence and affection of the whole colony. We soon became

so respected that we ranked as the principal persons in the town after the governor.

The simplicity of our habits and occupations, and the perfect innocence in which we lived, revived insensibly our early feelings of devotion. Manon had never been an irreligious girl, and I was far from being one of those reckless libertines who delight in adding impiety and sacrilege to moral depravity : all the disorders of our lives might be fairly ascribed to the natural influences of youth and love. Experience had now begun with us to do the office of age ; it produced the same effect upon us as years must have done. Our conversation, which was generally of a serious turn, by degrees engendered a longing for virtuous love. I first proposed this change to Manon. I knew the principles of her heart ; she was frank and natural in all her sentiments, qualities which invariably predispose to virtue. I said to her that there was but one thing wanting to complete our happiness : " It is," said I, " to invoke upon our union the benediction of Heaven. We have both of us hearts too sensitive and minds too refined, to continue voluntarily in the wilful violation of so sacred a duty. It signifies nothing our having lived while in France in such a manner, because there it was as impossible for us not to love, as to be united by a legitimate tie : but in America, where we are under no restraint, where we owe no allegiance to the arbitrary distinctions of birth and aristocratic pre-

judice, where besides we are already supposed to be married, why should we not sanctify our love by the holy ordinances of religion? As for me," I added "I offer nothing new in offering you my hand and my heart; but I am ready to ratify it at the foot of the altar."

This speech seemed to inspire her with joy. "Would you believe it," she replied, "I have thought of this a thousand times since our arrival in America? The fear of annoying you has kept it shut up in my breast. I felt that I had no pretensions to aspire to the character of your wife."

"Ah, Manon," said I, "you should very soon be a sovereign's consort, if I had been born to the inheritance of a crown. Let us not hesitate; we have no obstacle to impede us: I will this day speak to the governor on the subject, and acknowledge that we have in this particular deceived him. Let us leave," added I, "to the vulgar lovers the dread of the indissoluble bonds of marriage; they would not fear them if they were assured, as we are, of the continuance of those of love." I left Manon enchanted by this resolution.

I am persuaded that no honest man could disapprove of this intention in my present situation; that is to say, fatally enslaved as I was by a passion which I could not subdue, and visited by compunction and remorse which I ought not to stifle. But will any man charge me with injustice or impiety if I com-

plain of the rigour of Heaven in defeating a design that I could only have formed with the view of conciliating its favour and complying with its decrees ? Alas ! do I say defeated ? nay, punished as a new crime. I was patiently permitted to go blindly along the high road of vice ; and the cruellest chastisements were reserved for the period when I was returning to the paths of virtue. I now fear that I shall have hardly fortitude enough left to recount the most disastrous circumstances that ever occurred to any man.

I waited upon the governor, as I had settled with Manon, to procure his consent to the ceremony of our marriage. I should have avoided speaking to him or to any other person upon the subject, if I had imagined that his chaplain, who was the only minister in the town, would have performed the office for me without his knowledge ; but not daring to hope that he would do so privately, I determined to act ingenuously in the matter.

The governor had a nephew named Synnelet, of whom he was particularly fond. He was about thirty ; brave, but of a headstrong and violent disposition. He was not married. Manon's beauty had struck him on the first day of our arrival ; and the numberless opportunities he had of seeing her during the last nine or ten months had so inflamed his passion, that he was absolutely pining for her in secret. However, as he was convinced, in common with his uncle and the whole colony, that I was married, he put such a

restraint upon his feelings, that they remained generally unnoticed : and he lost no opportunity of showing the most disinterested friendship for me.

He happened to be with his uncle when I arrived at the government house. I had no reason for keeping my intention a secret from him, so that I explained myself without hesitation in his presence. The governor heard me with his usual kindness. I related to him a part of my history, to which he listened with evident interest ; and when I requested his presence at the intended ceremony, he was so generous as to say that he must be permitted to defray the expenses of the succeeding entertainment. I retired perfectly satisfied.

In an hour after, the chaplain paid me a visit. I thought he was come to prepare me by religious instruction for the sacred ceremony ; but, after a cold salutation, he announced to me in two words that the governor desired I would relinquish all thoughts of such a thing, for that he had other views for Manon.

"Other views for Manon !" said I, as I felt my heart sink within me ; "what views then can they be, chaplain ?"

He replied, that I must be of course aware that the governor was absolute master here ; that Manon, having been transported from France to the colony, was entirely at his disposal : that hitherto he had not exercised his right, believing that she was a married woman ; but that now, having learned from my own

lips that it was not so, had resolved to assign her to M. Synnelet, who was passionately in love with her.

My indignation overcame my prudence. Irritated as I was, I desired the chaplain instantly to quit my house, swearing at the same time that neither governor, Synnelet, nor the whole colony together, should lay hands upon my wife, or mistress, if they chose so to call her.

I immediately told Manon of the distressing message I had just received. We conjectured that Synnelet had warped his uncle's mind after my departure, and that it was all the effect of a premeditated design. They were undoubtedly the stronger party. We found ourselves in New Orleans, as in the midst of the ocean, separated from the rest of the world by an immense interval of space. In a country perfectly unknown, a desert, or inhabited, if not by brutes, at least by savages quite as ferocious, to what corner could we fly? I was respected in the town, but I could not hope to excite the people in my favour to such a degree as to derive assistance from them proportioned to the impending danger: money was requisite for that purpose, and I was poor. Besides, the success of a popular commotion was uncertain; and if we failed in the attempt, our doom would be inevitably sealed.

I revolved these thoughts in my mind; I mentioned them in part to Manon; I found new ones, without waiting for her replies; I determined upon one course, and then abandoned that to adopt another; I talked

to myself, and answered my own thoughts aloud : at length I sunk into a kind of hysterical stupor that I can compare to nothing, because nothing ever equalled it. Manon observed my emotion, and from its violence, judged how imminent was our danger ; and, apprehensive more on my account than on her own, the dear girl could not even venture to give expression to her fears.

After a multitude of reflections, I resolved to call upon the governor, and appeal to his feelings of honour, to the recollection of my unvarying respect for him, and the marks he had given of his own affection for us both. "Manon endeavoured to dissuade me from this attempt : " she said, with tears in her eyes, " You are rushing into the jaws of death ; they will murder you—I shall never again see you—I am determined to die before you." I had great difficulty in persuading her that it was absolutely necessary that I should go, and that she should remain at home." I promised that she should see me again in a few moments. She did not foresee, nor did I, that it was against herself the whole anger of Heaven, and the rabid fury of our enemies, was about to be concentrated.

I went to the fort : the governor was there with his chaplain. I implored him in a tone of humble submission that I could have ill assumed under other circumstances. I invoked his clemency by every argument calculated to soften any heart less ferocious and cruel than a tiger's.

The barbarian made to all my prayers but two short answers, which he repeated over and over again. "Manon," he said, "was at his disposal : and he had given a promise to his nephew." I was resolved to command my feelings to the last : I merely replied, that I had imagined he was too sincerely my friend to desire my death, to which I would infinitely rather consent than to the loss of my mistress.

I felt persuaded, on quitting him, that it was folly to expect anything from the obstinate tyrant, who would have damned himself a hundred times over to please his nephew. However, I persevered in restraining my temper to the end ; deeply resolved, if they persisted in such flagrant injustice, to make America the scene of one of the most horrible and bloody murders that even love had ever led to.

I was, on my return home, meditating upon this design, when Fate, as if impatient to expedite my ruin, threw Synnelet in my way. He read in my countenance a portion of my thoughts. I said before he was brave. He approached me.

"Are you not seeking me ?" he inquired. "I know that my intentions have given you mortal offence, and that the death of one of us is indispensable : let us see who is to be the happy man."

I replied that such was unquestionably the fact, and that nothing but death could end the difference between us.

| We retired about one hundred paces out of the

town. We drew : I wounded and disarmed him at the first onset. He was so enraged, that he peremptorily refused either to ask his life or renounce his claims to Manon. I might have been perhaps justified in ending both by a single blow ; but noble blood ever vindicates its origin. I threw him back his sword. "Let us renew the struggle," said I to him, "and remember that there shall be now no quarter." He attacked me with redoubled fury. I must confess that I was not an accomplished swordsman, having had but three months' tuition at Paris. Love, however guided my weapon. Synnelet pierced me through and through the left arm ; but I caught him whilst thus engaged, and made so vigorous a thrust that I stretched him senseless at my feet.

In spite of the triumphant feeling that victory, after a mortal conflict, inspires, I was immediately horrified by the certain consequences of this death. There could not be the slightest hope of either pardon or respite from the vengeance I had thus incurred. Aware as I was of the affection of the governor for his nephew, I felt perfectly sure that my death would not be delayed a single hour after his should become known. Urgent as this apprehension was, it still was by no means the principal source of my uneasiness. Manon, the welfare of Manon, the peril that impended over her, and the certainty of my being now at length separated from her, afflicted me to such a degree, that I was incapable of recognising the place in which I

stood. I suspected Synnott's death : instant relief struck the only relief for my wife.

However, it was this very thought that quickly restored me to my senses, and enabled me to find a solution. "What," said I to myself, "die in order to end my pain ! Then there is something I still state that the fate of all I love ! No, let me still the cruellest enemies in order to all her ; and when there prove of no avail, fly to death as a last resource !"

I returned towards the town ; on my arrival at home, I found Marion half dead with fright and anxiety : my presence restored her. I could not conceal from her the terrible accident that had happened. On my mentioning the death of Synnott and my own wound, she fell in a state of insensibility into my arms. It was a quarter of six hours before I could bring her again to her senses.

I was myself in a most deplorable state of mind ; I could not discern the slightest prospect of safety for either of us. "Marion," said I to her, when she had recovered a little, "what shall we do ? Alas, what hope remains to us ? I must necessarily fly. Will you remain in the town ? Yes, dearest Marion, do remain ; you may possibly still be happy here ; while I, far away from you, may seek death and find it amongst the savages, or the wild beasts."

She raised herself in spite of her weakness, and, taking hold of my hand to lead me towards the door :

"Let us," said she, "fly together, we have not a moment to lose; Synnelet's body may be found by chance, and we shall then have no time to escape."
"But, dear Manon," replied I, "to what place can we fly? Do you perceive any resource? Would it not be better that you should endeavour to live on without me; and that I should go and voluntarily place my life in the governor's hands?"

This proposal had only the effect of making her more impatient for our departure. I had presence of mind enough, on going out, to take with me some strong liquors which I had in my chamber, and as much food as I could carry in my pockets. We told our servants, who were in the adjoining room, that we were going to take our evening walk, as was our invariable habit; and we left the town behind us more rapidly than I had thought possible from Manon's delicate state of health.

Although I had not formed any resolve as to our future destination, I still cherished a hope, without which I should have infinitely preferred death, to my suspense about Manon's safety. I had acquired a sufficient knowledge of the country, during nearly ten months which I had now passed in America, to know in what manner the natives should be approached. Death was not the necessary consequence of falling into their hands. I had learned a few words of their language, and some of their customs, having had many opportunities of seeing them.

Besides this said resource, I derived some hopes from the fact, that the English had, like ourselves, established colonies in this part of the New World. But the distance was terrific. In order to reach them, we should have to traverse deserts of many days' journey, and more than one range of mountains so steep and vast as to seem almost impassible to the strongest man. I nevertheless flattered myself that we might derive partial relief from one or other of these sources: the savages might serve us as guides, and the English receive us in their settlements.

We journeyed on as long as Manon's strength would permit, that is to say, about six miles; for this incomparable creature, ~~with her usual absence of selfishness,~~ refused my repeated entreaties to stop. Overpowered at length by fatigue, she acknowledged the utter impossibility of proceeding further. It was already night: we sat down in the midst of an extensive plain, where we could not even find a tree to shelter us. Her first care was to dress my wound, which she had bandaged before our departure. I in vain entreated her to desist from exertion: it would have only added to her distress if I had refused her the satisfaction of seeing me at ease and out of danger, before her own wants were attended to. I allowed her therefore to gratify herself, and in shame and silence submitted to her delicate attentions.

But when she had completed her tender task, with what ardour did I not enter upon mine! I took off

my clothes and stretched them under her, to render more endurable the hard and rugged ground on which she lay. I protected her delicate hands from the cold by my burning kisses and the warmth of my sighs. I passed the live-long night in watching over her as she slept, and praying Heaven to refresh her with soft and undisturbed repose. Thou canst bear witness, just and all-seeing God! to the fervour and sincerity of those prayers, and thou alone knowest with what awful rigour they were rejected.

You will excuse me, if I now cut short a story which it distresses me beyond endurance to relate. It is, I believe, a calamity without parallel. I can never cease to deplore it. But although it continues, of course, deeply and indelibly impressed on my memory, yet my heart seems to shrink within me each time that I attempt the recital.

We had thus tranquilly passed the night. I had fondly imagined that my beloved mistress was in a profound sleep, and I hardly dared to breathe lest I should disturb her. As day broke, I observed that her hands were cold and trembling; I pressed them to my bosom in the hope of restoring animation. This movement roused her attention, and making an effort to grasp my hand, she said, in a feeble voice, "that she thought her last moments had arrived."

I at first took this for a passing weakness, or the ordinary language of distress; and I answered with the usual consolations that love prompted. But her

incessant sighs, her silence, and inattention to my inquiries, the convulsed grasp of her hands, in which she retained mine, soon convinced me that the crowning end of all my miseries was approaching.

Do not now expect me to attempt a description of my feelings, or to repeat her dying expressions. I lost her—I received the purest assurances of her love even at the very instant that her spirit fled. I have not nerve to say more upon this fatal and disastrous event.

My spirit was not destined to accompany Manon's. Doubtless, Heaven did not as yet consider me sufficiently punished, and therefore ordained that I should continue to drag on a languid and joyless existence. I willingly renounced every hope of leading a happy one.

I remained for twenty-four hours without taking my lips from the still beauteous countenance and hands of my adored Manon. My intention was to await my own death in that position ; but at the beginning of the second day, I reflected that, after I was gone, she must of necessity become the prey of wild beasts. I then determined to bury her, and wait my own doom upon her grave. I was already, indeed, so near my end from the combined effect of long fasting and grief, that it was with the greatest difficulty I could support myself standing. I was obliged to have recourse to the liquors which I had brought with me, and these restored sufficient strength to enable me to

set about my last sad office. From the sandy nature of the soil there was little trouble in opening the ground. I broke my sword and used it for the purpose; but my bare hands were of greater service. I dug a deep grave, and there deposited the idol of my heart, after having wrapped around her my clothes to prevent the sand from touching her. I kissed her ten thousand times with all the ardour of the most glowing love before I laid her in this melancholy bed. I sat for some time upon the bank intently gazing on her. At length, feeling that my strength was giving way, and apprehensive of its being entirely exhausted before the completion of my task, I committed to the earth all that it had ever contained most perfect and peerless. I then threw myself with my face down upon the grave, and closing my eyes with the determination never again to open them, I invoked the mercy of Heaven, and ardently prayed for death.

You will find it difficult to believe that, during the whole time of this protracted and distressing ceremony, not a tear or a sigh escaped to relieve my agony. The state of profound affliction in which I was, and the deep settled resolution I had taken to die, had silenced the sighs of despair, and effectually dried up the ordinary channels of grief. It was thus impossible for me, in this posture upon the grave, to continue for any time in possession of my faculties.

After what you have listened to, the remainder of my own history would ill repay the attention you seem

inclined to bestow upon it. Synnelet having been carried into the town and skilfully examined, it was found that, so far from being dead, he was not even dangerously wounded. He informed his uncle of the manner in which the affray had occurred between us, and he generously did justice to my conduct on the occasion. I was sent for; and as neither of us could be found, our flight was immediately suspected. It was then too late to attempt to trace me, but the next day and the following were employed in the pursuit.

I was found, without any appearance of life, upon the grave of Manon : and the persons who discovered me in this situation, seeing that I was almost naked and bleeding from my wounds, naturally supposed that I had been robbed and attacked. They carried me into the town. The motion restored me to my senses. The sighs I heaved on opening my eyes and finding myself still among the living, showed that I was not beyond the reach of art : they were but too successful in its application.

I was immediately confined as a close prisoner. My trial was ordered ; and as Manon was not forthcoming, I was accused of having murdered her from rage and jealousy. I naturally related all that had occurred. Synnelet, though bitterly grieved and disappointed by what he heard, had the generosity to solicit my pardon : he obtained it.

I was so reduced, that they were obliged to carry me from the prison to my bed, and there I suffered

for three long months under severe illness. My aversion to life knew no diminution. I continually prayed for death, and obstinately for some time refused every remedy. But Providence, after having punished me with atoning rigour, saw fit to turn to my own use its chastisements and the memory of my multiplied sorrows. It at length deigned to shed upon me its redeeming light, and revived in my mind ideas worthy of my birth and my early education.

My tranquillity of mind being again restored, my cure speedily followed. I began again to feel the highest aspirations of honour, and diligently performed the duties of my appointment, whilst expecting the arrival of the vessels from France, which were always due at this period of the year. I resolved to return to my native country, there to expiate the scandal of my former life by my future good conduct. Synnelet had the remains of my dear mistress removed into a more hallowed spot.

It was six weeks after my recovery that, one day, walking alone upon the banks of the river, I saw a vessel arrive, which some mercantile speculation had directed to New Orleans. I stood by whilst the passengers landed. Judge my surprise on recognising Tiberge amongst those who proceeded towards the town. This ever-faithful friend knew me at a distance, in spite of the ravages which care and sorrow had worked upon my countenance. He told me that the sole object of his voyage had been to see me

once more, and to induce me to return with him to France ; that on receipt of the last letter which I had written to him from Havre, he started for that place, and was himself the bearer of the succour which I solicited, that he had been sensibly affected on learning my departure, and that he would have instantly followed me, if there had been a vessel bound for the same destination ; that he had been for several months endeavouring to hear of one in the various seaport towns, and that, having at length found one at St. Malo which was weighing anchor for Martinique, he embarked, in the expectation of easily passing from thence to New Orleans ; that the St. Malo vessel having been captured by Spanish pirates and taken to one of their islands, he had contrived to escape ; and that, in short, after many adventures he had got on board the vessel which had just arrived, and at length happily attained his object.

I was totally unable adequately to express my feelings of gratitude to this generous and unshaken friend. I conducted him to my house, and placed all I possessed at his service. I related to him every circumstance that had occurred to me since I left France ; and in order to gladden him with tidings which he did not expect, I assured him that the seeds of virtue which he had in former days implanted in my heart, were now about to produce fruit, of which even he should be proud. He declared to me that this gladdening

announcement more than repaid him for all the fatigue and trouble he had endured.

We passed two months together at New Orleans whilst waiting the departure of a vessel direct to France ; and having at length sailed, we landed only a fortnight since at Havre-de-Grace. On my arrival I wrote to my family. By a letter from my elder brother, I there learned my father's death, which I dread to think, the disorders of my youth might have hastened. The wind being favourable for Calais, I embarked for this port, and am now going to the house of one of my relations who lives a few miles off, where my brother said that he should anxiously await my arrival.

THE END.

.

1

2

3

4

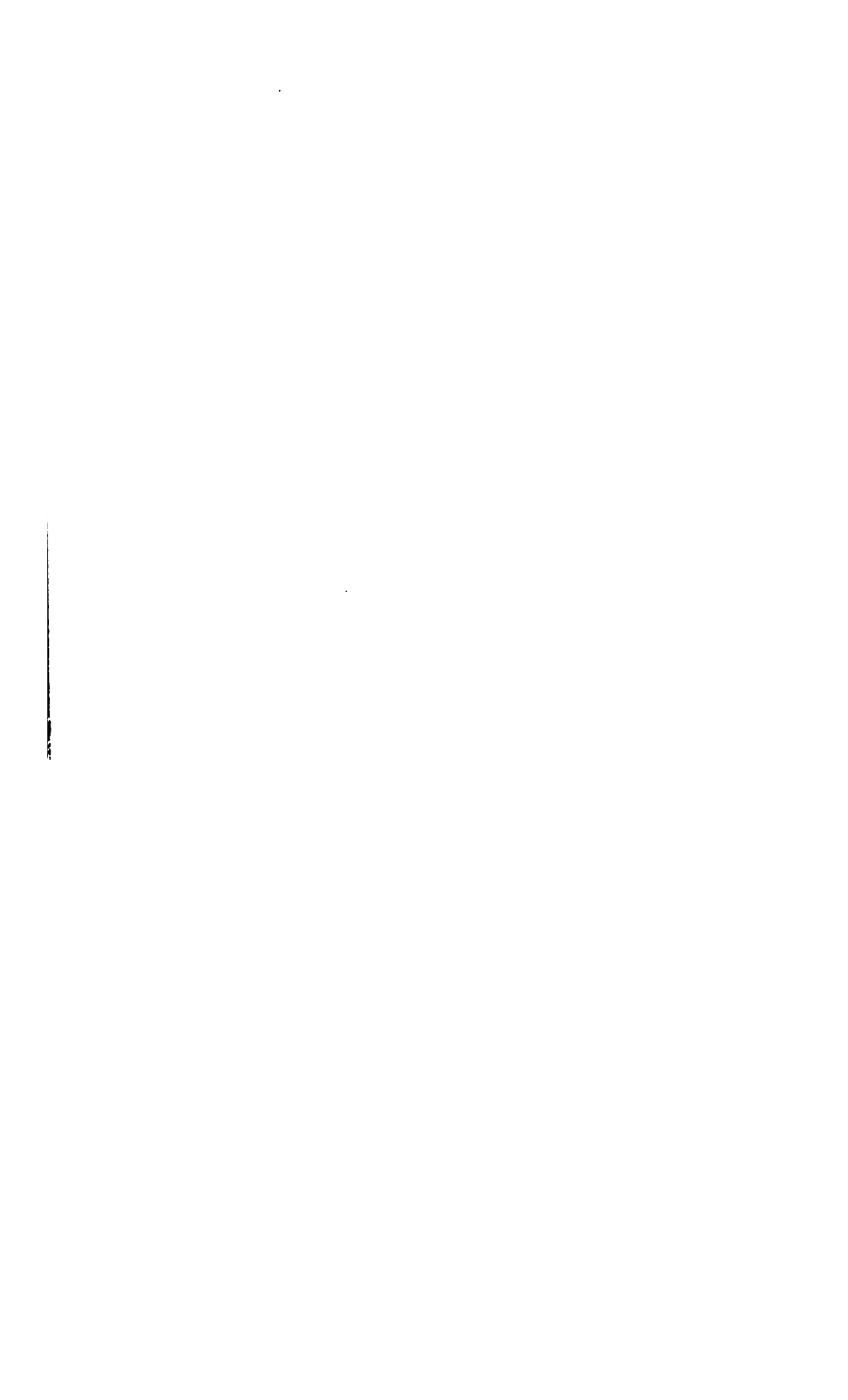
5

6

7

8

9





3 2044 024 261 109

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS
NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON
OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED
BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE
NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE
BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

